



Single Mom

WardenAmyBee

Created by FLAG

<http://www.flagfic.com/>

Table of Contents

Summary.....	1
Chapter 1.....	2
Chapter 2.....	6
Chapter 3.....	20
Chapter 4.....	32
Chapter 5.....	47
Chapter 6.....	63
Chapter 7.....	77
Chapter 8.....	92
Chapter 9.....	108
Chapter 10.....	125
Chapter 11.....	126
Chapter 12.....	143
Chapter 13.....	158
Chapter 13 Seattle.....	170
Chapter 14.....	180

Table of Contents

Chapter 15.....	194
Chapter 16.....	205
Chapter 17.....	215
Chapter 18.....	224
Chapter 19.....	235
Chapter 20.....	245
Chapter 21.....	256
Chapter 22.....	267
Epilouge.....	277
2 Plus 2.....	293
NOMINATION!.....	294
VOTING!.....	296
Award winners translation PDF file.....	299
Fics 4 Nash and more.....	301
Hidden Star Awards.....	303

Summary

Bella is a single mom back in her hometown 5 yrs after high school. It is a struggle. What happens when her friends decide to play match maker with two parents that have had bad luck in love? AH, Normal pairings. they haven't meet before.OOC mostly.FNISHD

Chapter 1

This story is complete. It came in second in the 2009 Twilight awards in the Best mother/father-daughter/son moment category. This story is also available in a PDF version fully complete since it is being translated to Polish! I am leaving in notes as I post the edited chapter and replacing the UN-edited chapters.

ALL LEMONS HAVE BEEN MOVED TO ROGUE FAN FIC (LINK ON PROFILE!)

I have good reason for this since FF pulled a co-written story of mine and several favorites that had lemons sorry but only the clean version for FF readers.

Anonymous reviews are disabled because the first few chapters were posted completely raw. Some people took this as a chance to be rude and crude. Don't leave crap in a review that's is appropriate for a PM.

Remember this was my second story and also has a sequel.

Disclaimer: I don't own the Character

Single Mom

Ch. 1

Friends and Comfort food

"Fine, walk out of her life. I have done it all on my own anyway. Your new girlfriend and son are more important than your own daughter. You are just like your father, a failure!" I shouted into the phone and slammed it down on the receiver.

This was a never ending battle, a useless fight.

Single Mom

She deserves better, we deserve better.

Tears were falling down now. Would he ever man up? I crumpled on the couch. I could be as miserable as I wanted right now. No one was home but me. Charlie had taken Macie to the park. I had at least another thirty minutes before they got back.

NO I will not cry over this anymore. I am done with it. No more.

I whipped my eyes and went to the kitchen. They would be hungry when they got back. I threw some water on my face and grabbed a hand towel to dry off.

I heard the front door open.

"Mommy Mommy Mommy!"

"In the Kitchen sweetheart." I called out.

She came running in and wrapped herself around my leg. I bent down and kissed her forehead.

"Did you have fun sweetie?" I hope she couldn't tell I had been crying.

"Oh yes mommy! We swung and played on the slide! And I saw a lady bug!" she squealed happily.

"That sounds fun!" I said as enthusiastically as I could manage. Dad walked in just then smiling at us. "Why don't you run upstairs and wash those dirty hands and that nasty face. Granddaddy gave you ice cream didn't he?"

"YAP! And it was STRAWBERRY!" She giggled very excited.

"OK go wash up I will handle granddaddy." I smiled at her.

"OK mommy." she giggled running up stairs.

Single Mom

"SLOW DOWN I AM NOT GOING TO THE ER TONIGHT!" I yelled sternly after her.

Dad laughed "She defiantly gets that from you."

"Yap, now ice cream before dinner? Really dad, did you think I wouldn't know?" I laughed at him.

"Hey I have every right to spoil her so hush I did the same to you and you turned out ok."

"I guess so or maybe that is why I have so much bad luck with men."

"Nope that is your mothers fault not ice cream." He laughed.

"Sure blame it on mom." I turned back to the fridge to find something to cook.

"Another fight huh?"

"That obvious?" I said turning to face him.

"Come on sit down let's talk." he said.

"She is going to be hungry here soon I need to fix dinner. " I said trying to get out of talking about it.

"We are going to Angela's to eat. So don't worry about it." he smiled.

"Why didn't she tell me about it then?" I asked just before the phone rang.

Charlie answered.

"Oh Hey Angela... ya I told her... We will be there soon as we can. Thanks."

Angela had been one of my best friends growing up. When I moved back we picked up where we left off. She was Macie's God mother. She and Ben got

Single Mom

married right out of high school. They had their own house now and we usually all got together there. I figured most of the crew would be there tonight.

"We will talk later Charlie." I glared at him.

He smiled knowing he would talk it out of me. I couldn't keep anything from my father.

"Besides me and Macie have to get ready. When did you find out anyways?"

"At the dinner, her and Jessica were there and told me they were planning on cooking tonight that we had to come."

"Fine, get ready." I laughed as I play stomped up the stairs to find my daughter.

Chapter 2

there may be some small errors here and there but its cool at least it snit raw anymore that goes for the rest of it from here on out.

Disclaimer: I don't own anything lol

Single Mom

Ch.2

Good Friends and a Glass of Wine

Everyone was already at Angela's when we got there. We were running late.

Macie went running around to the back porch looking for everyone. Since today was such a nice day she had no problem knowing where to go.

"Hey Macie Moo Moo" Jessica giggled as she swiped her up and spun her around.

"Aunt Jessie, your silly" she giggled and headed for the trampoline. Angela and Ben's place was very kid friendly. Her brothers and sisters were always here and they planned on having a big family there self's.

I had not had a problem deciding who would be her God parents. There was no question. Angela and Ben were perfect for each other. They were only twenty two and already had their own house. They had been living here for about a year now. She was working herself through college to be a nurse and Ben was a welder. They both adored my daughter. Angela was like my sister so I never second guessed my decision. Jessica I had known my whole life. But she was just not stable enough to have the responsibility. She started out across the state in college to be an engineer. A year later she was back and was going to school close by to be a pharmacist. Mike Newton and her had been dating since my first mother's day. They had all come down to celebrate right after Jessica had

Single Mom

moved back. She was too flighty still to be tied down in case something happened to me.

"Hey Bella and Charlie finally decided to join us" Ben laughed,

"Hey sorry we had a melt down over which pants she was wearing" I laughed. My daughter was normally well behaved but she had gotten up early and hadn't had a nap.

"Ya it was awful, she was perfectly fine until Bella went up to get her ready. I think she pinched her or something" Charlie laughed. I just stuck my tongue out at him.

"Oh come on Charlie, my Macie bug is an angel she doesn't have melt downs" Angel laughed coming out to hand Ben a plate of burgers for the grill. She had the windows open in the kitchen.

"Hey Ang need some help?" I laughed walking up to the porch to find something to do. Maybe they wouldn't catch onto my bad mood.

"Just have a seat there Bella everything's about ready if Ben will ever get the burgers on and stop playing around with Mike and Eric." She glared at him.

"Where are Jacob and Nessie?" I asked looking around for my other friends. We were all really close, especially since I had moved back from Port Angeles.

"Oh she had a finally to study for and Jacob is working on his bike. They may come over later" Eric said.

He had a date tonight and she was sitting quietly beside him smiling.

I gave her a quick smile and introduced myself since Eric had forgotten his manners.

"Hi I am Bella Swan, that's my dad Charlie and my daughter Macie. Sorry our dear friend Eric here has forgotten his manners." I laughed

Single Mom

"Hi Bella, I'm Erin. I will forgive him this time, but he better behave himself" she laughed poking him in the ribs.

"Sorry jeez, we were talking about Halo. We have a challenge starting up here." He laughed.

"Ya I'm going to kick his ass" Mike laughed.

He knew better than to talk like that in front of Macie. She had just walked up behind him when he had said it, so he was in for it. I just smiled as she slapped him on his shoulder.

"Uncle Mike you don't say that word" she demanded with all the parental tone she could muster.

We all died laughing as he blushed and turned to scoop her up.

"Sorry Moo Moo, will you forgive me this time?"

"If you promise to behave, and get me a cookie" she smiled. She could work her magic on all of them and they would fall for it every time.

"I'm game, but is mommy."

I was about to tell her no when Angel stepped out trying to glare at her.

"Nope I have you something special for dinner then a special dessert so no cookies until after dinner"

We all laughed at her trying to be stern. Macie just huffed and climbed off Mike and went back to playing.

Our night was like usual, nothing different. We ate, we talked and laughed a lot, the guys went to the living room to play video games, leaving us girls alone. Charlie had even started to like the games since we were over here all of the time. He had even asked for a Wii for Christmas.

Single Mom

Macie was asleep and laying in the guest room already.

"So when are you going to tell us what's going on Bella" Angela said coming out of the house with two bottles of wine and four glasses.

I had thought I had hid it well enough and they wouldn't have noticed. I guess I was wrong. When the wine came out they defiantly knew. They knew when we need good friends and a couple of glasses of wine to ease the conversation.

"You know your acting sucks Bells, so you might as well tell us already." Jessica laughed.

"That obvious" I laughed grabbing a wine glass and a bottle of wine. This conversation was going to be fun. Charlie had driven so I was ok with a few glasses.

"Ya you are a really bad liar, besides me and Jess have known you for years. Even when you moved off to be with him we still knew when something was wrong so you might as well spill" she said handing me the cork screw.

"Thanks" I laughed trying to get the bottle open before this conversation got too deep. "Damnit Angela get another cork screw already this thing hates me" I laughed.

"Ya it's an operator error, here give me the damn thing." She laughed taking it from me. She had no problem getting it open and poured us all a glass. Erin was watching us like she was a little scared.

"Sorry Erin, they are relentless when it comes to my personal life so you will just have to be prepared for some loud mouthed girls for a few. And most likely some fowl language." I laughed.

"Let me guess, the asshole called again?" Jessica laughed already catching onto my mood. I had relaxed and it was showing more since my daughter had feel asleep on her Uncle Bens lap.

Single Mom

"Oh Jess, however did you guess" I played along.

"Oh let's see. Bella quiet most of the night, Bella not giving Mike shit for every little thing he did, or the fact that every time you didn't think Macie would notice, you scowled angrily" Angela pointed out.

"Ok so did I seriously miss some baby daddy drama or what" Erin laughed clearly ready to hear about the asshole.

"We prefer to call him sperm donor" Jessica laughed. I liked Erin, and it looked like Eric did to. He must have planned on keeping her around since he brought her around all of us.

I was loosening up. My best friends were great for this. I killed my glass and poured another.

"Damn he must have really pissed you off" Angela noted.

"OH ya, he is a useless piece of shit. I honestly do not know what I ever saw in him"

"Ok so what happened" Angela asked curious.

"Well the bitch actually started this one again. Apparently they delivered a summons for James to appear in court for failure to pay child support" I was interrupted by Jessica

"Hell YA!"

I laughed before continuing. "Ya so I am an evil bitch and she wants to kick my ass and all that crap, the same crap he usually pulls. Except this time, she informed me that James will give up all his rights." They gasped at it all. They had always tolerated him for my sake and now they despised him for what he was doing to our daughter. I really loved these girls.

Single Mom

"Well I told her to go to hell and hung up. James called back and was asking me what the hell was going on. Apparently he didn't know about Victoria calling me. I told him all about it. He wants me to drop all the child support stuff, like the moron he is. We had it out really bad and he is considered dropping his rights. The last thing I said to him before I hung up was: Fine, walk out of her life. I have done it all on my own anyway. Your new girlfriend and son are more important than your own daughter. You are just like your father, a failure."

"Wow you really told his ass off this time, I am so proud of you Bella." Jessica said.

"Thanks, but the part is I don't care anymore I just want him gone. I don't want anything from him anymore. I would have been better off not going back to him when I was eight months pregnant. She would have been better off not having him at all." Letting a tear escape, I was pissed and crying was something I tend to do when I was pissed, especially when James was the reason.

"Oh Bell's I'm sorry he is such a dick." Angela said getting up and hugging me. I hugged her back; I really needed one right now.

"Not your fault I am the one that made the decision. I am just not letting them back into her life and disappear again."

"Bella?" I heard Erin ask. She had been quiet this whole time.

"Yes?"

"I hope you don't mind but I think I can help you." She said smiling.

"What do you mean?"

"Well Eric and I have been seeing each other for awhile now. I know this is the first time I have meet any of you but I have heard a lot about you. He left out a lot about Macie's father but I know how much he cares for you guys. He even

Single Mom

told me he tried to ask you to prom and you turned him down, and that he and Angela ended up together for a short time. "

"Wow" we all three said at the same time making her laugh.

"Ya we don't keep secrets from each other. We wanted to make sure we were actually going to keep seeing each other before we introduced each other to our friends and family. I meet his parents last night. He meets mine next weekend when they come in from New York. But my point is. Both of my parents are very successful lawyers. They run their own law firm and I am a lawyer also. I work for them. I actually specialize in family law. Custody, child support and all that good stuff." She smiled and winked.

"The deal is he can't give up his rights unless there is someone standing in line to adopt her. Even if he did give them up he would still have to pay child support until she was adopted. It really depends on if you want him out of her life or not on what my next advice is."

"Wow Erin and here I was thinking you were this quiet shy girl. Turns out you are a shark" I laughed pouring myself another glass of wine.

"We'll look why don't you come to my office sometime this week and talk about your options."

"Thanks Erin but I am struggling right now I can't afford you."

"Money is not a problem. It would be free." She shrugged like she just handed offered me a shit load of money.

"Oh Erin that is so sweet" Angela and Jessica said.

"It really is but I can't take it."

"And just why not?"

Single Mom

"I wouldn't feel right. I want to pay for everything and take care of my daughter own my own. I am just not one for gifts."

"Well fine you can cook me dinner" she laughed.

"Oh come on Erin you can't be serious." I looked at her shocked.

"I am a lawyer Bella, I am very serious. I mean seriously. This guy is a prick and your daughter deserves better. She is amazing and smart. You deserve better."

I let another tear fall. Angela was patting me on the back.

"Bell's take it." I heard Eric say. They were standing in the kitchen window. They had heard it all.

"You guys are so damn nosey I swear." I laughed.

"Ya well this is the best damn thing I have ever heard eavesdropping Bella and I say take it. I mean my granddaughter and you are everything to me. If she wants dinner we will give her that fivefold. Whatever Bella, just take the damn deal." He said coming out and hugging me.

"Ok fine your own Erin, but be prepared, James is a giant asshole" I smiled whipping the tears away.

"And I will kick your ass if you mess this up Eric Yorkie" Angela said. Making us all laugh.

"Thanks for the faith girls thanks for the faith." He shook his head through the window.

"Oh guys I just got a wild hair! Get out here I just had the best idea ever, and bring more wine these bottles are shot!" Angela laughed. We were all feeling a little buzzed. We had been downing the white zinfandel like it was water.

Single Mom

"Sure thing babe!" Ben said already walking out with the wine.

"My sweet, sweet husband rocks" she giggled as he bent down to kiss her.

"EWWW No PDA in front of the pissy woman" I laughed making everyone hysterical.

"Ok so what's this plan?" Ben asked still laughing at me.

"Well WE all haven't been camping in a long time; I think we should go next weekend." Angela said really excited.

"I am out; it will be way too cold for Macie." I said instantly.

"We can get a sitter Bella. Come on we haven't done this in forever" Jessica exclaimed.

"Sorry guys I know I'm not as much fun since I had Macie but that is how it has to be"

"No it isn't" Dad said sternly.

"What do you mean?" He usually let me decide what I thought was best why was he stepping in.

"Well Bella you are twenty Three years old and you work your butt off for that girl. Plus your damn mother has been driving me batty coming to visit so much. Let her keep her this weekend. You need to breathe. Then first think Monday you can go job hunting like you wanted to."

"But dad..." He cut me off.

"Bella just shut up and listen for once jeez you are hard headed." He laughed.

"Ok no promises until I call Renee."

Single Mom

"YAY" they all exclaimed.

"And who is watching Macie while I go job hunting?"

"ME" Jessica, Angela, and Erin exclaimed. I like this girl already. I will kick Eric's ass myself if he messes it up with her.

"How about you all watch her and I cook dinner when I get back home for us all?"

"Deal" they all laughed.

"Ok so we pretty much know what Renee is going to say already so I say we get busy planning this trip. It needs to be big. I say we leave Friday morning and drop Macie off on the way. We can grab groceries in Port Angeles right after we drop her off." Jessica giggled happily.

"Sounds good" we all said.

"So someone call Jacob and get him and Nessie in. We need to call Leah and Seth to, I'm sure Embry and them will come to. Oww and I'm going to invite some people from work." Ben said. You could see the wheels turning in his head already.

"Ok so same spot as we always go to?" I asked knowing what my answer was.

"Hell why did you even have to ask that?" Eric laughed.

"Um Eric you know we can't go right?" Erin said.

"Oh shit your parent that's right. My bad guys, sorry we are out."

Holy cow he must be wrapped. He has never turned down a camping trip.

"Um wow dude" Mike laughed at him.

Single Mom

"Hey meeting the parent's sorry, kiss my ass Newton."

That made Mike die laughing.

"Ok so we are a couple short and I'm the single here as always but hey. Oh and no Ideas about setting me up. Eric, Jacob, and Mike are no longer allowed to set me up." I laughed.

"Ya whatever sorry Bella at least we tried. We didn't know they were complete losers until after they cheated or acted like assholes." Mike laughed.

"Ya I bring out the best in men I swear" I laughed drinking another glass of wine.

We finished up our wine and Charlie put Macie in her car seat and drove us home. I was a little tipsy and He put her to bed. I had put her Pj's on when she started to get sleepy knowing she would fall asleep before we even finished dessert good. She was true to her ways.

I now had a lawyer to get this mess sorted out with, I was going on a mini vacation with my friends, and I was getting a job. My life was turning around more and more as time went by.

I changed into my own PJ's and crawled into bed. Thinking about how much my life had changed since I had first meet James.

FLASHBACK

We had all came to visit Renee for the weekend. She had just moved to Port Angeles because she missed me. She had lived in Phoenix since her and Dad's divorce. I stayed because she didn't want to pull me away from my friends and school. We were helping her look for stuff for her and Phil's new place when I saw him. He was watching me.

I smiled shyly at him and he came over. I was waiting on Angela to meet me back at the food court. I was all alone. The others were scattered throughout

Single Mom

the mall.

" Hi I'm James" he said walking up to me.

" Hi, I um am Bella"

" Nice to meet you Bella. You must be new around here I haven't seen you here before."

" I am from Fork's. I am here visiting my mom. She just moved to town."

" Oh that's cool. I was wondering if I could call you sometime. I know we just meet but I saw you in the book store and I couldn't help but notice how pretty you were." He was really hot and seemed sweet I didn't see the harm in it.

" Sure I would like that a lot, maybe we could get to know each other since I will be around now that my mom is here." I smiled at him.

" That's great. I will call you later tonight." He said as I gave him my number. Thank goodness I had a cell Charlie hated it when boys called wanting me to go out. I hadn't dated much so he was pleased that I was trust worthy.

He smiled and waved buy to me as the crew started to walk over.

" OH MY GOD BELLA! Who was that?" Jessica giggled.

" His name is James. He is kind cute. He is going to call me later" I giggled.

A few phone calls and dates later we were in love

We had dated for two years off and on bore I decided to move in with mom to be closer to him. We had our fights like most couples and even broke up several times. I finally gave into our make out sessions on my prom night. He was a year older than me. We had fought a lot of trivial stuff and even made it through him cheating on me.

Single Mom

He had proposed and I said yes so when prom night had rolled around so did we. It was your typical high school love affair.

A month after graduation I found out I was pregnant. I stopped everything I was doing wrong and was ecstatic. We had postponed the wedding right before graduation to make sure we were ready. Now I was pregnant and he was ready to get married.

I didn't want to though. I felt like he only wanted to marry me because I was pregnant.

I worked my way through my pregnancy. We had problems but got back together about my eighth month. He moved in with me and Renee to help take care of the baby.

A month after Macie was born things started to turn awful. I was suffering post partum depression and we were barely speaking.

That's when it was finally over, for good.

"Do you love me anymore?" I asked out of the blue. I had been folding our daughter's cloths and putting them away. I had turned and was looking him right in the eyes.

I watched his eyes fill with fear, regret and relief.

He walked out of the room.

I let him leave and sat his stuff on the front porch never once losing it. I was glad it was over.

Present

I had done it all on my own since then. I moved back to Fork's a few months later. He was always wanting to try and get me back and I was tired of it. I just wanted her to have her father and me happy, separately. We were no good

Single Mom

together. He moved on a few months later and stopped seeing her pretty much all together. He had a son and a new girlfriend. Macie wasn't allowed in his life by her. He hadn't seen her since the weekend before Christmas and it was now August. The last child support was in August of last year and it was from his mother. She had been the one to come and get her and visit with her on his weekend. They had all stopped now. I still got the raging phone calls though.

Maybe he still wasn't smoking pot. I would not allow that around her at all. I had given any form of drugs up the moment I had her. I was never into them much unless I was with him smoking or popping a pill. I had wine with the girls occasionally but nothing more.

She was everything.

I slipped out of bed and padded down to her room. I stood there and watched her sleep for a moment before I went in and kissed her forehead.

Now I could sleep.

I went back to bed and drifted off to sleep, calmer than had been all day. Things were looking brighter now, at least I hope.

Chapter 3

So here is a really intense chapter. I will try to get Ch 4 up soon. Just hang on a real good friend of mine is in ICU right now from a bad car accident. I through myself into writing tonight when I got home. So I will probably have ch. 4 up soon It may take a little longer since it is drama free and a happy chapter. Yes they need a happy chapter. It has been a lot of drama so far. So read this and Review and show me lots of love and I will get Chapter 4 out even sooner!

Single Mom

Ch. 3

Meeting

My week was very busy. I couldn't wait to get away with everyone. My dreams had been filled with all of the things that had happened between me and James, so I had not had very much sleep all week.

I had called Erin's office Monday and scheduled an appointment for Thursday afternoon. My week had flown by. I packed my camping gear and Macie's bag for Renee's. Gathering all the information Erin would need consumed most of the week.

Renee was watching Macie today while I met with Erin. Her office was in Port Angeles so it worked out perfectly.

I finally found an outfit I thought was acceptable for job searching. I decided I would wear it to the meeting with Erin to see what she thought. I was wearing white slacks, a deep blue v neck with a black tank underneath and a pair of black heels.

I had just dropped Macie off and pulled into the parking lot. Charlie was waiting for me. He wanted to be there to hear Erin's advice first hand.

Single Mom

"Hey kid, you ready to tell your side" he said wrapping his arm around my shoulder.

"Couldn't wait for this day to come and now that it is, I am scared to death."

"Now Bella you know there isn't anything to be scared of. Let's just talk to Erin and give her the story. She can help you go from there." He said patting me on my shoulder.

"Thanks' dad I really did need the reassurance."

"That's what I'm here for" he laughed opening the door.

We rode the elevator up in silence. My hands were sweating.

Dad could not possible begin to understand why I was so nervous. I guess he would find out everything now. I had not told anyone the whole story. Now my new friend and lawyer along with my father were about to find out everything.

The doors opened and there Erin was waiting on us.

"Hey guy's glad to see you. I had some free time before our meeting so I grabbed us some coffee from across the street."

"Oh how sweet Erin, you know your way to a man's heart don't you" Charlie laughed.

"Don't forget I also know my way to their wallet, Chief Swan, but you are safe" She laughed leading us back to her office. He laughed and followed.

"Thanks Erin this is really sweet of you." I told her.

"No problem girl besides its giving me a chance to go after the type of men I cannot stand. Plus you are cooking for me" she grinned at me sitting down at her desk.

Single Mom

"True, I wish you guys were going camping with us though."

"Oh you haven't heard yet?"

"Heard what?"

"We are going! My parents are not going to be able to make it back to town this weekend. They decided to take a little trip just them and the boat. So Eric gets out of it till next weekend" she laughed.

"Oh that's great! Everyone will be glad you guys are coming. You will get to meet the rest of the crew plus I understand more people are coming so we should have a blast."

"That's great. But before we head out tomorrow I want to get this situated and in gear before." She smiled.

"Sure thing better now than ever that someone hears all the gory details of my past. This will be the first time dad hears about a lot of things and you are the only other person that I have told. Angela and Jessica do not even know the details." I said a little ashamed that I had not spoken of most of it.

"Well Bella to be honest that is why I wanted you to come here instead of doing this with all of them around. I am very aware of that fact. This is not my first case like this and the details of most of the worst are usually left out to protect family and friends. I figured this would be better for you and I getting details sorted out. We can always kick Charlie out if you like" she winked at him.

"Nah I think he needs to hear it all finally." I smiled, relaxing a little.

I handed over the custody agreement along with the child support agreement. I had also included a detailed print out of the payment summary from day one.

"Wow he is far behind on support. I am surprised he has not been arrested on this." She said reading through the papers.

Single Mom

"He has been arrested once before. They were supposed to have a warrant issued for him now as well. But there is no record of one." Charlie spoke up.

"I see, well I am going to speak to the District Attorney about that myself and see what I can get done. It doesn't look like your case worker has been handling this case at all. Bella, I need to know about this custody agreement. It looks like it was a mutual agreement through the DA's office"

"It is. I talked to the woman and set it up. They sent him a copy for him to look over. He did not argue and signed and sent it back in. He has visitation with her every other weekend and we were sharing holidays. I have to uphold that agreement even though he is not paying child support from what I was told. But also he has not seen her since the weekend before Christmas, about six months ago. They just recently started calling again."

"Who picked her up and dropped her of when they were getting her?"

"His mother, until she lost her job that is when everything stopped."

"Well Bella I think we have a good case just on these facts of getting his visitation revoked. I also see you had a restraining order against him on behalf of you and Macie when she was three months old?"

"Yes" Charlie did not know about all of this. I was still living with mom at the time.

"I need details please"

Charlie was listening intently. He could tell I was nervous now. He patted my arm in encouragement.

"Well it was not to long after our break up. We had always fought, but there was only one time he ever thought about hitting me. He was high that night and I don't even remember what it was over but he had shoved me into a wall and held me there. I kneed him and he got off. But the restraining order was because of the threats and phone calls. He was not happy after we broke up.

Single Mom

When he would come to see her he would not pay her any attention it was all towards me. He wanted me back and I was not going back. He finally snapped. I had locked every door and closed all the blinds I wouldn't leave the house for a week. He kept placing harassing phone calls. I called the police twice. The last time I called them was because he was going to kill me and take Macie. Or he was going to take her and I was never going to see her again. He hoped I died and all sorts of things. He actually called while the police were there they answered the phone and he was raving mad. The filled the harassment report and Renee took me to the court house to get the restraining order. I knew what he was capable of and I was scared to death that he would actually kill me or take her from me."

"Bella why didn't you tell me" dad asked very shocked.

"Charlie maybe this should wait" Erin said.

"No. Dad I didn't tell you because I didn't want any more trouble. I knew you would be really upset. I didn't need that at the time." I said dabbing at my eyes. Charlie would have killed him if I had told him.

"I'm sorry baby; go ahead I will be quiet" he said rubbing my shoulder.

"I was not the best of people before I got pregnant. James was always high and I was usually smoking pot with him. I was even popping zanex... it all changed when I got pregnant. We were going to be good parents but the damage to the relationship was already done. I had always told him I would never keep him from seeing her as long as he was a good father. I honestly do not trust him now. Last year when they were actually getting her she came back with a bite mark on her arm. You could count the teeth. And I do not want my daughter around him if he is still doing drugs. I was told not to long after she was born that he was downstairs smoking pot right before she was born."

"Well Bella I think we can be safe and say that we have a good case here. He has told you he is considering dropping his parental rights?"

"yes"

Single Mom

"Do you want to push for that? Right now you could probably get his visitation revoked. IF he drops his rights he will still be forced to pay child support until you are married and she is legally adopted if the chances arrive."

"I just want him out of her life. She doesn't really know him."

"Well we will start the paper work. This is probably going to get messy Bella. Charlie, just be prepared when these papers get filled and he is notified that he will probably be raving mad. We are basically suing him for his parental rights and back child support. This by my rough calculations is about five thousand dollars."

"It will be ok. We will be fine, if he shows up he has to answer directly to me" Charlie said sternly.

"In the mean time Bella I want you to not bring up were ever Macie is to him or his family. If she is enrolled in daycares do not tell them were. I have a feeling that he is not going to take this very well."

"Thanks' Erin, I will never be able to repay you for what you are doing for us." I said letting another tear fall.

"Bella do not thank me yet. This is going t get worse before it gets better I am sure." She said standing up and coming over to me. I stood up and hugged her.

"Well it doesn't matter as long as it does get better." I laughed out with tears still streaming down my eyes.

"Now go pick up that pretty girl of yours and enjoy her company because tomorrow we are going camping!" She squealed.

"Ok thanks see you tomorrow and just call me if you need anything else" I laughed as we left her office.

When we got downstairs Charlie turned to me "Bella I am sorry I should have noticed all the bad. But from here on out I will be watching for him and as soon

Single Mom

as those papers are filled the entire station will be looking out for you and Macie. I have to get back to the station give your mother my regards. I didn't know she helped you through all that I really should be nicer to her." He laughed and hugged me.

"Thanks dad, I will be sure to tell her." He walked me to my car and I drove to my mothers.

She and Macie were playing with a giant ball out front when I pulled up.

"Can I play that looks really fun." I laughed climbing out of the car.

"No mommy you will get dirty" Macie laughed.

That reminded me I had forgotten to ask Erin about my outfit. I will ask her tomorrow.

"Hey honey" mom smiled and waved.

"Hey mom Thanks for watching her."

"No thanks needed you know I adore her. Besides she had a brilliant idea"

"Oh what was that brilliant idea" I laughed as she walked over to the porch I was waiting on.

"Why don't you two stay the night tonight? You haven't stayed up here in awhile and that way you can fill me in on how it went with Erin. Plus I wouldn't have to cook, Phil would be grateful"

"I really would be Bella" he laughed coming out to join us. Renee playfully slapped his arm.

"What you said it not me" he laughed.

"Well I guess we could I can just drop her bag off on our way back through."

Single Mom

"Sounds great" Renee and Phil said at the same time sending Macie into a fit of giggles.

Macie and I had moved to Forks almost a year ago. I wanted to give mom and Phil their privacy. I also wanted a fresh start away from James. He only lived three blocks away but hardly ever saw his daughter when we lived so close. Charlie loved the idea of having us with him. I finished up my classes and moved. I had not had a chance to find a job because I had not had a sitter. I took care of the house and Charlie had supported us. The only things my parents have agreed on in years was that they were going to help me get a degree. I had always told them I was going to pay them back. In a way I was by taking care of Charlie but I still wanted to do my part.

Renee was very excited with what Erin had said. She and Phil had been the ones there when the harassing and threats were taking place. She begged me to tell Charlie and was glad that I had finally told him. They wanted him out of our life as much as I did.

I ran to the store to grab the ingredients for Phil's favorite foods. They were babysitting all weekend after all. The least I could do was cook them dinner. I was glad to spend some time with them; it had been over three months since I last stayed.

I pulled into the grocery store and got out. Renee had decided to tag along. Macie was with her Paw Paw Phil.

When we walked into the store I quickly froze up. Working the register was a very pregnant Victoria.

I quickly thawed and darted to the nearest aisle out of her sight range.

"Was that that bitch Victoria working the register?" Renee hated the woman and it had not surprised me one bit the way she referred to her.

"Yes, I had no clue she was pregnant again! Maybe that is why they have been calling so much. What am I going to do? I can't go through that line" I said a

Single Mom

little spastically.

"Calm down, you don't have to. We will get what we need and I will check out. You can go on outside while I get inline."

"Deal" I said shaking on it. I was not to thrilled about letting her buy but I really had no choice at this point. Victoria and I did not get along. The last conversation we had was filled with all sorts of language I do not usually say.

Renee had decided she would pick up extra stuff for the weekend while we were here and she was checking out anyway. We made our way as quickly as we could manage through the store.

"Ok I think we are through Bella. Why don't you sneak around her and go on out. "

I nodded and started for the front doors. I shouldn't have worn heels. I was almost out the door when she stepped in front of me.

"What the hell do you think you are doing here?" She demanded throwing her hands on her hips.

"Last I checked it was a public place. I don't have to explain shit to you." I glared back. She wasn't getting the best of me.

"You're trying to get me fired aren't you? You will do anything to ruin James and I. Get it through your head he doesn't want you or that kid you say is his."

"Look here bitch. I was here grocery shopping with my damn mother. That kid is his daughter I have already given him his paternity test. And as for you getting fired I think you just took care of that yourself talking to a customer like you just did in front of the whole store!" I snapped back angrily pointing out the crowd that was around the register and us.

She raised her hand and was about to slap me when someone caught her hand. I looked to see who it was.

Single Mom

"Let Go of me Bitch" Victoria spat at Renee.

"I think you better think twice before you raise your hand to my daughter again. I don't care if you are pregnant or not. You will not hit my daughter because she pointed out the truth to you. Best thing for you to do is to stay the hell out of her and her daughter's life. Because that kid is going to come out sooner or later and I will have to take care of you myself" Renee spat right back at her.

The manager was watching this closely now.

"Victoria you're fired, I saw the whole thing and you took care of getting yourself fired."

She started to protest but gave in. She took her smock off and flung it across the store as she grabbed her purse and walked out. She was glowering at me the whole time. If looks could kill I would be dead. I will hear about this soon enough.

"Miss would you like for me to call the police?" the store manager asked.

"I... um... I am not sure just give me a second." I managed to get out.

I looked around for Renee. She was closing her phone.

"Honey we are calling the police and we are filling a restraining order. She tried to hit you. Charlie agreed one hundred percent." Just as she was saying this two police cars pulled up.

"Sorry Miss I already called them. I was not sure what was about to happen." A little lady spoke up.

"Thanks" Renee said.

My phone rang a few seconds later.

Single Mom

"Hey Erin... Ya... they are already here... Ok see you are Renee's"

"Well Erin is on her way to get the restraining orders. So it looks like that is already taken care of. Charlie had already called her. She was at the Court house when he called."

"Good now let's get these statements out of the way and get dinner ready"
Renee laughed.

I grabbed her in a massive hug.

"Thanks mom. I probably would have just frozen up." I laughed into her shoulder.

"Its ok sweetie let's just get this over with" she said patting my back.

We gave our statements and I explained to the officer about the past incidents with her calling and harassing. I also told them about the upcoming papers being filled and that my lawyer was waiting for me to sign the restraining order against her right now. We were also expecting to have to have another one put out on James as soon as the papers were filed.

We got back to the house and Erin and Charlie were there.

I had decided I was not going to leave Macie in close range to him. Everyone disagreed with me.

"Bella she will be fine. I am actually going to be here all weekend. We are going to be training with the officers here. Besides they know that there is a restraining order being signed. The Judge is also going to sign off on it in the morning. It will be delivered as soon as he does." Charlie said.

"But I still do not feel right." I said.

"Bella everything is fine. Besides phones will work were you are going. Just go and have a good time."

Single Mom

"Fine but I will call" I said finally. I couldn't win this battle.

I cooked dinner for us all and finally got Macie ready for bed. Charlie had stayed for dinner and finally left.

I made Macie sleep in the bed with me. I wanted to snuggle her since I was going to be gone all weekend. I finally drifted off to sleep, feeling much better knowing she was safe and sound right next to me.

Sorry the ending was sleep but I had to have her drift away. I have done that with myself and daughter in a situation similiary to this one. But remimber this Bella is not a softy softy. She is tuffer than you think. Didn't you like Victoria getting fired! Renee wasnt really going to hit her but she wanted her to think she would have. i kept wanting to put Ur not pregnant in ur face in there but that is just cruel lmao. But there is more drama. Not next chapter, it is a fun chapter.

REVIEW lol and I promis I will post Ch. 4 a lot sooner. I will start writing it tomorrow between visitation hours I am show me some love I really need it.

Love

AmyBee

Chapter 4

Ok here is the first part of the camping trip! Sorry I have been sick for three days. The writing was going slow, since I was sick. But the good news is my friend is a lot better! I am so happy I will probably have Ch. 4 up in a few hours if all goes well. Please review and tell me what you think.

This story is completely OOC and All human. The drama isn't over for Bella and Macie. This is just were life starts getting better in some ways.

DISCLAIMER: I own nothing but the plot of this story and Macie since she is based off my daughter haha.

Single Mom

Ch. 4

Campfires and Fresh Air

I looked over at the clock beside the bed. It was now six in the morning. I had spent the last hour watching my daughter sleep.

I had not had the best night's sleep and now all I wanted was a cup of coffee. I slipped out of bed and padded down the hall towards my goal.

After getting a cup of coffee and my morning routine out of the way I was still the only one awake. I decide to make breakfast for everyone. The smell of food in the air should wake them up.

I was right of course. As soon as I put breakfast on the table they start straggling in one at a time.

"Wow Bell's this looks great" Phil said grabbing him and Renee a cup of coffee. I smiled and went on fixing Macie's plate and her glass of milk.

Single Mom

"So I have to meet the girls in Forks to go grocery shopping and grab our cloths. Do you want Macie to go with me or stay here while I am gone?" I asked ready to get the day going. I was really excited about getting out of town for a few days

"I'm staying with Nana and Pawpaw, you promised!" Macie said with a pout.

"Honey you are staying" Renee quickly reassured her.

"I was just talking about while mommy went to get our cloths and meet Angela, Jessica, and Erin." I said with a smile to reassure my baby girl.

"I staying here! Pawpaw is going to mow! And I want to ride with him" she giggled happily.

"Sure thing pumpkin, just as soon as all that breakfast is gone and mommy is on her way we will get to work" Phil laughed.

"Well that settles it then, can we finish breakfast now" Renee laughed. Macie adored both of them. She easily won anyone over and had a specific kind of relationship with each person. She loved to garden with Renee and hang out with Phil. Charlie was her granddaddy though. Phil was more of a best friend. She got away with anything with him.

We were just finishing up breakfast when the phone rang. It was Angela, they had decided to just pick up my bag and meet me here.

I had already had my shower waiting on my bag when the girls finally got to Renee's.

"Hey girls" Renee smiled happily letting them in.

Everyone said hello. Macie gave them a hug and bounded up the stairs to change her cloths to play.

Single Mom

"Give me a minute to get changed. I don't think I would do very well in these close" I laughed heading up to change with my bag.

I came back down ready to hit the road.

"So where are we meeting the guys?" I asked smiling,

"They are meeting us here in about two hours. We thought we could go ahead and get the groceries and ice in the coolers before they got in the way" Erin laughed.

"Good idea, let me just tell Macie bye and we will head out, ok?"

"Sure thing"

I kissed my daughter and told her to be good. She promised she would.

We would be back in an hour or so.

We had finally gotten the shopping done and pulled back up at my mothers. The guys were already there playing with Macie in the front yard.

The guys came up to kiss there girls hello. I found myself thinking about how nice it would be to have someone to kiss me hello. I must have been deep in thought because Ben was asking if I was ok.

"Ya sure sorry was just zoning out. So are we ready to hit the road?" I laughed shrugging off the train of thought. I had far to much to worry about for a boyfriend. Every relationship I had been in since James had failed miserable. I just wasn't ready for anything right now, especially with taking James to court.

"YA all set" the guys laughed.

"Us to, so let's tell Macie bug bye and hit the road" Angela smiled happily.

Everyone said their goodbyes and loaded into the vehicles.

Single Mom

"Have fun mommy! I will miss you" she said blowing me kisses as we pulled out of the drive way. I returned the sweet gesture with a giant smile.

"I will miss you to baby! See you soon" I called out the window."

The guys were in front with all the gear loaded in Angela's Aztec. We had the coolers in the back on my 4-runner. The iPod was blaring through the speakers and we were all singing along. I focused on all of the conversations not letting my mind wonder to the fact that I was the only single person in our group.

"So who else is coming" Jessica asked.

"Well Jacob and Nessie should be there when we get there, and the Cullen's." Jessica nodded in approval "they started to school with us my junior year. They are really cool. Emmet and Eric work together, Jasper is one of Ben's bosses, and Edward is a musician. Alice is Jaspers wife and she has her own clothing line she works out of the home a lot. Rosalie is Emmet's fiancée and she runs the bank." Angela finished.

"Oh cool I guess I did miss a lot while I was gone. So is this Edward guy not brining his girlfriend?"

"He is single" Jessica giggled

"OH NO! NO one and I mean no one is setting me up." I glared back at her.

"Hey we don't know much about him really. Apparently he hasn't been back in Forks long. He left right after graduation. This is just a coincident" Angela laughed.

"YA I really do not believe you. But it is too late for that now." I laughed. They would never give up.

We pulled up to the gate of our old campsite. I was still the only one with a key considering it was my land. The land had been my grandparents. When they passed away it was left to me.

Single Mom

"So these Cullen's do know they are going to be at my place and are going to behave right?" I asked cautiously before I handed over the key to let Angela unlock it.

"Yes they are really nice" Angela reassured me.

"Ok hurry up I haven't been here in years and I am dying to see what it looks like now" I laughed as she got out.

I had always dreamed of building a cabin out here. The only reason the guys wanted to meet in Port Angeles was to grab some extra gear. We were only about twenty minutes outside of Forks.

I pulled through the gate and Let Angela hop back in. The guys would close it when they came through.

I drove along the dirt road back to our camping spot. It was only two minuets farther.

"This place is beautiful Bella" Erin gasped as we turned the bend into the large open meadow. There was a creek flowing at the Edge of the meadow.

"Thanks, I haven't seen it since the weekend of graduation. It hasn't really changed much though." I smiled. I had really missed this place.

"Sure hasn't and I was here the next year. This is where Ben and I celebrated our first wedding anniversary. Bella was nice enough to loan it out for a weekend. But no one has been here since." Angela said clearly reliving her fond memories of the place.

We finally pulled up and parked along the tree line beside the creek. We always camped in front of it.

"Well I guess we should get busy setting up camp" I said sliding out of the truck. The guys had pulled in right behind us and were climbing out tossing bags and tents to each other.

Single Mom

"You did leave the gate unlocked for them didn't you Ben" I asked.

"Ya I told them to lock it up when they came through. They should be here soon"

"K that works" I smiled and went to start setting up my tent.

We had just got done setting up camp when a giant silver Jeep pulled in.

Ben introduced me and Erin to the new comers.

Hey everyone this is Bella and this is Erin I'm sure you know everyone else" he laughed.

I smiled "Hi everyone glad you could come"

"Thank's this place is great!" The big guy exclaimed.

"Hi im Alice, this is Jasper, Rose and Emmet" She said smiling happily slightly bouncing. She reminded me of a pixie.

"Nice to meet everyone, wasn't there supposed to be..." I was cut off by a motorcycle pulling in. It had Ducati wrote across the tank and was silver and black.

"Oh ya you finally decide to get my bike here" Jasper said as the guy was pulling off his helmet.

"Oh get over it man there is not a scratch on it besides Emily would freak if she saw me on it, I had to play" he laughed shaking off the glares Jasper was throwing at him.

I thought they said he was single? I guess they really didn't know much about him. He had a mess of bronze colored hair but I couldn't really see his face he was turned strapping the helmet to the bike next to another helmet.

Single Mom

Then he turned... DAMN he was hot!

I shook the thought from my head reminding myself that I was not ready to try and date. Besides someone as hot as he was would never be interested in me.

I returned to my lounge chair and picked up my book getting comfortable again. The group walked over.

"Hey everyone this is Edward" Ben said.

"Hi" he said in a velvet soft voice that sent chills down my spine.

The guys had shot him a "hey man" while the girls smiled and said "hi". Erin was just as new to these people as I was but wasn't as shy as I was.

"Oh ya Edward that's Bella with the book and Erin. I know you have met everyone else once or twice" Ben laughed.

"Nice to meet you" he smiled.

"You too" I smiled back. Erin smiled and waved her and Rose were already deep in a conversation. He smiled one more time and went to help the rest of the group set up the tents.

This guy was hot. If I was dating I wouldn't have minded, but he was also taken.

Everyone had set up their tents and we were all sitting around the camp fire. We were going to get ready to grill burgers.

"So this is your place" Alice asked. We had all carried on small talk throughout the afternoon.

"Sure is" I smiled. This girl was as hyper as a pixie on crack but I liked her.

"This place is awesome" she giggled.

Single Mom

"Thanks" I said popping the cap of a beer. We all only drank on occasion and this weekend was probably one we would end up tipsy.

Everyone was paired off with their perspective partners, except me and Edward.

"So why arnt you hear with anyone?" He asked sitting beside me.

"That would require someone to bring with" I laughed.

"Really I would have thought you had someone" he smiled.

"Nope" I said popping my P. "What about you?"

"That would require someone to bring also" he laughed.

"I thought I heard you talking about an Emily earlier" I asked with a smile. If he wasn't seeing her who was she.

"Oh I was, she doesn't like me to do things that would get me hurt"

"I see" I said clearly confused on this Emily.

"Emily is my daughter she will be four in a few months" he said smiling a crocked smile.

"Oh, that's cool at least I am not the only parent out here" I laughed in relief.

"You have kids? I didn't think you looked old enough"

"Thanks, but I am I am twenty three. My daughter turned three in March." I laughed; men would do anything to flirt. He may be hot and all but I am not falling for any Romeo moves, I reminded myself.

"Well that is cool, where is she this weekend?" He smiled.

Single Mom

"She is wit my mother and stepfather. They all decided I needed a break from the world" I laughed taking another drink of my beer.

"Don't feel bad, same here. Emily is with my parent's they said the same thing." He laughed.

"Bella can you come help me real quick I can't find the hamburgers meat" Angela called

"Sure be right there" I called. "Sorry got to get to work" I smiled getting up and going to help Angela.

"Bella he is totally hot! Plus he was totally smiling after you" Angela gushed quietly.

"Hush woman" I poked her in the ribs and dug the hamburger meat out of the cooler.

"Thanks" she laughed.

"How could you have missed it?" I laughed.

"I didn't want to get my hands even colder" she laughed and went running over to the table to pat out the burgers.

"Thanks Angela" I laughed and walked by rubbing my wet hand across her check. Everyone burst into laughter.

We finally managed to eat. I had not laughed this much in years, probably since our last camping trip. Emmet was always getting slapped upside the head by someone, mostly Rose. He was hilarious. The whole group was a blast to be around.

The guys were all joking around wrestling while us girls were talking and laughing.

Single Mom

"Oh I just had the best idea" squealed the hyper pixie Alice.

"Oh crap look out everyone Alice has had an idea" Edward laughed and pretended to duck.

"Just because you are my brother doesn't mean I will not hurt you" she glared at him making him laugh even more.

"Wait you guys are brother and sister?" I asked. They acted nothing alike.

"Unfortunately we are twins, do not even asked how we got paired up cause I have no clue" she laughed.

"I can tell" I laughed.

"Hey now we are not that bad." Edward said.

"Ok whatever back to Alice's brilliant idea" Jasper laughed.

"Ya" everyone said laughing. We had already had a few beers.

"So I think we should play Waterfall!" she bounced in her seat.

"Oh ya, I haven't played that in forever!" Jessica giggled bouncing along with her.

Everyone agreed to play.

The game got started and a few beers in I decided everyone was trying to hook Edward and me up.

"Ok guys its been fun but I am going for a walk. I want to see if the old swing is still there and how much work it needs" I laughed at everyone and got up.

"Oh whatever party pooper you are just mad you keep having to drink" laughed Eric.

Single Mom

"Believe what you want loser I'm going for a walk" I laughed and grabbed a lantern, a few beers and a jacket and headed for the old swing.

I was a little up the trail when I heard him.

"Hey Bella, wait up" Edward called after me.

"Oh hey, what's up Edward?" I asked as I turned to see him jogging up behind me.

"Not much just had to get away from those guys. They seem like they are on a mission, I figured I would fuel the fire" He laughed.

"So you figured it out to I see. You know you chasing after me is just going to make it worse"

"Well at least it will be amusing, besides who really cares"

"Mr. Cullen if didn't know you were following me to make them think something was up I would think you were flirting with me." I laughed.

"Well what makes you so sure I was following you to make them think something" he smiled.

We were walking through the meadow towards the swing now.

"Well which is it flirting or getting even?" I smiled back popping the top of two of the beers I grabbed. I handed him one with a smile. His fingers lightly brushed my hand when he accepted.

"Thanks, and it might be a little of both. I usually don't follow women off into the woods. They could be dangerous." He laughed.

"You are right especially when we are getting tipsy and have stalkers" I laughed and tripped over a rock,

Single Mom

I was going down face first, until two strong arms wrapped around me and pulled me up into an embrace.

Our eyes were locked.

"See women are dangerous, aren't you glad I followed you" he said softly with a crooked grin.

I was not focusing very well in his arms.

"Um ya thank you. I would have done that at some point or another" I laughed straightening myself up.

"Really now?" he said raising his eyebrow and letting me go. It was a shame really; I could have stood there for awhile longer.

"Ya I am kind of a klutz." I laughed and shrugged on my jacket.

"Well I guess I will just have to watch out for you for the rest of the weekend. So were is this swing at anyway?" he laughed.

"Ya well I am not so sure right now. Maybe we should look for it tomorrow when It is light out and I am not on the verge of being completely drunk" I laughed.

"Sounds good to me. I'm pretty lit myself, we better get back before we are wasted and they think we are out here doing something more than looking for a swing" He laughed and turned back towards the camp.

We walked back making small talk about our daughters and our friends. When we got back to the campsite they had given up on the game and had the stereo in Emmet's jeep blaring.

"Oh my, is that Purple Rain I am hearing?" I looked at Edward trying not to snort out in laughter. We had downed the other two beers on the way back.

Single Mom

"Oh ya no are mistaking that one. I do believe we are not the only ones drunk now" he laughed out making everyone turn to look at us.

"Oh look the love birds are back" Emmet boomed with laughter/

"Ha Ha Ha you are hysterical Em." Edward glared at him.

"Dude, Prince really? Are you that wasted you are already singing to Rose?" He laughed making Emmet glair at him. Everyone was hysterical now at a drunken Emmet scowling. He looked kind of like a giant teddy bear, a big drunken teddy bear.

"Dude Emmet you make me think of a big drunken teddy bear" I laughed. Everyone was laughing even harder now. Angela fell over the cooler she was sitting.

"Angela are you ok!" I managed to laugh out. She stood up and was still laughing.

"I'm great just a little tipsy" She slurred out.

"YA wasted sounds more like it" Edward laughed.

"YA whatever you got the point" she said stumbling her way over to Ben's lap.

Everyone paired of as usual. It was just me and Edward.

"So I think this party is just me and you now" I laughed plopping down on the double camp chair.

"Ya they can't handle being social" he laughed sitting down with me.

"Wanna have some fun?" I wiggled my eyebrows at him.

"What did you have in mind" he smiled that crooked smile.

Single Mom

"Well they are all having a make out session so let's mess with them" I whispered.

"Deal" he chuckled "But first I have to find a bush" he laughed.

He got up and made his way over to the ledge of the cliff on the other side of the tents. I decided I wanted another beer. I got up and made my way over to the cooler. I managed to trip over the little grill we had brought.

"Oh crap Eddie's done feel!" I heard Emmet jump up laughing.

"It was me he is going piss or something. The grill got in my way" I laughed I had managed to keep from crashing to the ground.

"Wow \Bella maybe you should just have a seat" Rose laughed.

"Maybe your right how about you grabbing me another beer then" I laughed making my way back to the chair.

Edward was back and grabbed two beers before rose could even get up.

"I got them. Jeez Em thinks for the vote of confidence. I am not the klutz of the bunch Bella is" he laughed sitting down beside me.

"Ya and the bad part was I am fine it would have happened beer or not" I laughed taking a drink of the fresh beer.

"Wow you two are to funny together" Emmet laughed and went back to making out with Rose.

"So much for our plan" I shrugged.

"Ya I think you and the grill gave enough interference" he laughed. We were staring into each other's eyes again. His green eyes were amazing.

Single Mom

So I hope you like this chapter. It is a fun chapter and so is the next. I will hopefully have it up later today, if all goes well and you all review like crazy Don't forget to review! I love hearing from you guys and it makes me write quicker!

Thanks

Amybee

Chapter 5

I AM SO SO SO SORRY GUYS! Please do not torch me or rip me to pieces. I have been sick since last week. Plus I was with my Edward all weekend. My back was killing me all day yesterday and I had a migraine most of the day today. I tried everything to get it gone so I could finish up for you guys. So here is Ch. 5. I love you guys!

Single Mom

Ch. 5

Campfires and Fresh Air Part 2

We were torn from our starrng contest by a very happy Jessica and Alice.

"Guys I had an idea" Jessica gushed.

"Hey Edward you might want to worry about her ideas as much as you do Alice's" I laughed.

Jessica and Alice just stuck there tongues out.

"We are playing truth or dare! So get your asses over around the fir" Alice demanded.

"What if we don't want to" I toyed with her.

"To late their minds are made up we are stuck" Edward laughed pulling me up from the chair. He moved our chair into the circle with everyone else. They had even moved the beer cooler.

"Ok so who is starting this insanity" I said as I sat down with a fresh beer.

"I will" Alice said with an evil grin. She really could be scary at times.

Single Mom

"Oh joy!" Edward faked his enthusiasm.

Alice just shot him a glare before she started.

"Jessica truth or dare?"

"Dare!"

"Ok... I dare you to give Mike a lap dance." She giggled.

"No problem" she said jumping up to start her lap dance. Everyone was laughing. It was hilarious. She tried her best not to stumble.

"Ok my turn!" She giggled as she plopped down on Mikes lap. He seemed to enjoy it even though she was drunk.

"Erin truth or dare?"

"Dare" she laughed.

"That's my girl" Eric said proudly, making everyone giggle and chuckle.

"Ok so I dare you to go jump in the creek"

"That shits going to be cold, but I will. You better have me a blanket and towel Eric" She laughed and started towards the creek. She stripped down to her boy shorts and sports bra and jumped in.

"That shits cold!" she screamed and jumped out. Eric was there to wrap her in a towel and blanket just like she had asked.

"Ok so since Emmet found me so damn funny, truth or dare big guy? She laughed and wiggled her eyebrows.

"Oh come on, dare of course" he boomed with laughter at the thought of picking truth.

Single Mom

"What I thought you would say." She paused to laugh evilly "I dare you to strip to your boxers, climb on top of your Jeep and sing Oppss I did it again, by Britney Spears!" she said busting out into laughter.

Everyone laughed even harder at Emmet's reaction.

"You're shitting me right" Emmet glared at her and shot us all one for laughing.

"Nope better get busy big man" She managed to laugh out.

"Fine I will do it and I will be the sexiest man alive doing it" he laughed.

He reluctantly pulled his clothes off and climbed to the top of his jeep. Rose hit play on the CD player. Someone had actually had the CD.

He was singing away when Alice pointed something out.

"What's that right at the edge of his boxers? She whispered in shock.

Jasper edged up a little closer and fell to the ground laughing.

"Holy shit Emmet! You got a Rose tattoo on your ass!" he laughed pointing at Emmet.

Rose had a smug grin on her face. Everyone was dyeing laughing.

"Ya so whatever, get over it and stop checking me out" he said jumping down. Of course everyone laughed even harder.

"No more questions unless it is your turn, and I believe it is my turn now" he said plopping down in his seat next to Rose. He waited for everyone to recover from their laughing spell.

"Ok so time to take the focus of me" he laughed. "Edward... Truth or Dare home boy" he had a sly grin. He was defiantly up to something.

Single Mom

"Since it's you asking truth" Edward laughed. He clearly knew Emmet all too well.

"Ok party pooper...well let's see... So do you think Bella's hot?" he smirked.

Shit... shit... shit. What the hell was he thinking? I felt my face turn a deep crimson. I knew they had invited him to try and set us up, but I didn't think they would go this far. Ya he was cute...ok fine as hell, but still. He is completely out of my league. I have never been able to get a guy like him. I was pretty proud of myself for not really being real flirty with Edward. Now Emmet goes and asks something like that. I can't possibly start to like this guy I will only get hurt again.

"Ya" Edward said smiling. I blushed more if that was even possible. I felt like my face was on fire. Everyone was hooting and hollering and Emmet and Mike were giving cat calls.

"Ok my turn... who shall my victim be" Edward pondered.

Please, oh dear God please skip over me.

"Alice" he smirked.

"Truth!" she squalled.

"Where is the most public place you have ever done it?" he laughed.

"The dressing room of American Eagle" she blurted out and laughed. Jasper just grinned.

"Please tell me that was not yesterday when I was in the stall next to you Alice" Rose glared.

"Opppps Sorry Rosie" she giggled.

Single Mom

"Ok my turn now!" she bounced on jaspers lap. Jasper cupped his hands around her ear and whispered something. When he was finished her face lit up.

"Bella! Truth or dare?" she said happily.

Shit why was I even in this circle again.

"Why me?"

"Because I want to and it is my turn and you have just been skipped over and over" she laughed.

"Fine since I must...Truth I guess."

She bounced in excitement.

"Ok so Bella what do you think about Edward?" she wiggled her eyebrows.

I glanced over at Edward he put his face in his hands and started shaking his head like he was embaraced. Why were they doing this to us? We were both adults and had children for goodness sakes. I should be able to pull this off without giving anything away. Everyone was waiting patiently for my answer.

"He seems nice; I just met him tonight so I really don't know." I answered honestly. My question was a little easier to get around than Edwards,

"Ok so my turn, Angela, truth or dare?"

"Truth" she giggled.

"Ok... So... When was the first time you and Ben did it? And you can't say when you got married because I know your not that much of a prude" I laughed.

"Fine, it was prom" She said blushing.

Single Mom

"I Knew it!" Jessica and I said at the same time dying laughing.

"Ya whatever my turn!"

The game lasted until everyone went. My sides were hurting from laughing so much. Everyone ventured off on their own some going to sleep and others just wondering around.

I was sitting in the chair snacking on a granola bar when Edward came back over to sit.

"Well hey, I thought you crashed out" I said.

"I tried but I just couldn't get comfortable" he laughed.

"Ya me to I usually have Macie to wear me down, and I was up at the crack of dawn" I laughed.

"Ya me to, Emily is usually bouncing around like Alice all day."

"Wow two Alice's that's got to keep you busy."

"Ya but she is a little calmer than Alice unless she is around her. Then it is like being around two pixies hyped up on sugar"

"I was thinking more along the lines of a pixie on crack but hey that works" I laughed.

"Ya that's about right." He laughed.

"I also have a lot on my mind tonight so it isn't helping me sleep." He added.

"Same here so don't feel bad"

The truth was I was trying to avoid Edward since everyone went to bed or whatever. Him answering Emmet's question earlier had stuck with me. I just

Single Mom

can't see how I would be hot to him. Why should I even attempt to start flirting? Even if he was interested he would only hurt me just like everyone else. It hasn't even been but three months since my last fiasco.

"What are you thinking about?" Edward asked sitting down beside me.

"Honestly?"

"Yes honestly" he laughed.

"Just thinking about how messed up my love life has been."

"Me too, It makes it worse when I see all of them together. So why are you single anyway, if you don't mind me asking?"

"No not at all, and I know what you mean. They are all in love and it is absolutely disgusting, but I love them anyway." I laughed before continuing. "But I just have no luck in love. The last guy I was seeing about three months ago decided he would rather see a girl I was becoming friends with from school. They met through me on my birthday. Apparently they had been texting for a month or so. I found out about it and couldn't take it anymore so I ended it. I am usually the one that gets cheated on or lied to. But in my defense lying is as bad as cheating."

"Wow, what a loser he was to give you up." Edward said making me blush.

"Thanks I guess, but it was more of a welcome when I thought about it. He was not what we need. So what's your story?" I said blushing.

"Well I have dated a few women since Emily's mom. The last girl was a liar and a cheater, plus Emily didn't like her. I haven't had anything serious really since my divorce and Jane was the last one who actually had a chance to meet Em."

"Sounds about like me" I laughed.

Single Mom

"Ya, so what about Macie's dad?"

"Oh he isn't really around. Erin is actually my lawyer and is working on getting the paperwork together to take his rights away. James has actually brought it up several times himself. He hasn't paid child support in over a year now and hasn't seen her since the weekend before Christmas. His girlfriend is totally psycho. Her name is Victoria; I have a restraining order against her because she tried to attack me in the store yesterday. But they will be out of our life soon, thanks to Erin. So you said you were divorced?"

"Wow, loser. Ya Tanya and I met in high school. We were always pretty happy together. We had always had our differences but we made it work. We got married right after high school and moved to Alaska. We had Emily and started to grow apart I guess. She had an affair and we have been split up for about a year and a half. My divorce should be final the first of next month. It seems like it has taken forever. She wanted money and I didn't give it. I gave her the house and stuff. I have only been back here for a few months now. She finally decided she didn't want Emily. So I brought her home with me. She was the only reason I stayed as long as I did. It only took her six months to decide that Emily was tying her down. Marcus ushered her off to Italy the minute Emily got in my car."

"I'm so sorry, Edward." I wanted to cry for him.

"It's fine, nothing to be sorry about, it is what it is. People make choices and others have to deal with it" he laughed.

We were sitting there looking into each other's eyes. All I wanted was for him to kiss me. I knew it wouldn't happen; the man was clearly out of my league.

"You know I wasn't lying early when I said I thought you were hot."

WHAT! He really thought I was hot. I felt the blood pool in my cheeks. My face had to be blood red.

"No I didn't know that."

Single Mom

"You are actually more than hot. You are really beautiful, especially when you blush like that." He smiled that crooked smile from earlier and tucked a strand of hair behind my ear. I was completely shocked.

"Thanks" I managed to get out.

Our eyes were locked once again. His hand was still on my cheek.

"I think I am going to kiss you" he whispered. I just nodded.

He leaned in and our lips brushed softly, sparks were flying between us. He pulled me closer and our lips met fully. My arm snaked around his neck while my fingers tangled in his hair. I felt his tongue run across my bottom lip and I let him in, our tongues fighting for dominance, which neither would gain. When we finally separated we were both a little breathless. Our eyes still locked together.

We were torn apart by a giggle. I turned my head sharply to see all the girls standing there. Alice had given them away.

"You Nosy little freaks!" I said standing up and storming off to my tent.

I heard Edward call after me and herd the girls following after.

"It would be very wise for you to just leave me the hell alone right now girls." Not even turning around.

What the hell was I thinking letting him kiss me. He of course was not looking for anything remotely similar to what I was. How in the hell did I let that happen. I would have only been a weekend fling before he went on with someone new. Thankfully the girls pulled me to my senses. I stripped down to my by shorts and put on a long sleeve shirt.

"Bella can I come in?" Edward was asking.

"Why?" I shot back. What the hell did he want?

Single Mom

"I just want to talk to you. Please, Bella" he said softly pleading.

"Fine" I grumbled and rolled over with my back to the door and covered up. I didn't want to look at him. I had an air mattress and was quite comfortable.

"Do you mind if I sit down, this tent is a little short" he laughed.

"Whatever" I said coldly. I hope he doesn't have this idea that I am some easy screw.

I felt the air mattress move and then Edward was beside me.

"Can you at least look at me?" he said softly.

Damn him and his sweet velvet voice. I could feel my resolve cracking slightly.

"I don't want to" I said stubbornly.

"Bella I am sorry about kissing you. I understand if you want me to leave tonight. But if we were not interrupted and you jumping up to leave I would have done it again, to be honest."

What the hell. This guy was an amazing kisser, gorgeous, and in my bed. I felt my resolve crumbling more. Wait a second, hold the phone. He was going to kiss me again.

I rolled over slightly barley touching his chest.

"I'm not a weekend fling sorry, you don't have to leave just please avoiding kissing me." I grumbled. I wanted him to kiss me again. Hell I wanted him to rip my clothes off and make love to me right here. I didn't care if everyone heard or not.

"A weekend fling is that what you think?" he sounded offended.

Single Mom

I gave up and rolled on my back, brushing his wonderful muscles with my arms. DAMNIT he was amazingly hot.

"Look I know your type. I have been around the block a few times and I am not looking to be someone's weekend fling, one night stand or booty call..."

His lips came crashing down to mine cutting me off. I couldn't resist him. Even if we did have a one night stand it would be absolutely worth every minute of it. We finally separated for air.

"Look Bella I think you got the wrong idea. I don't have time for all of those things. I wouldn't want those things even if I had the time for it. I kissed you because you are the most beautiful fascinating women I have met and you have had my attention since the moment I saw you. I figured they were trying to set me up with someone but I am not looking for anything that you said earlier. I am a single dad and I do not want that around my daughter. I meant to ask you to dinner before I kissed you but I didn't have the chance."

"Really?" I blushed.

"Really, so will you go to dinner with me soon?"

"Yes, I would love to. I'm sorry I jumped to conclusions."

"It's ok I understand. It is kind of my fault I realized I told you I had not had anything serious. I just haven't met anyone worth bringing home to meet Emily or my family."

"I still feel horrible. I would completely understand if you didn't want to go to dinner with me now" So he wasn't what I thought he was. At least he says he isn't.

As we were laying there the rain started falling.

"Well Looks like my sleeping bag is going to be nice and wet when I get over there" he said.

Single Mom

"Why is that?" I asked curiously.

"My tent is at the other end of everyone's. Yours is the first one. There are four between us and Alice's sleeps like 15 people. She wanted to make sure she had room for cloths and be comfortable." He laughed.

"Wow that little pixie is crazy. Well you can crash here I guess. But um I am already dressed for bed so I am not coming out of these covers. If you want to strip down or whatever I will turn over" I laughed.

"Thanks, I really would like to, they reak of beer. I kind of spilled the one I had chasing after you while ago." He laughed.

"Ewww get off the bed" I said playfully pushing him.

"Turn over then" he laughed.

I turned over and heard him undressing. I knew he was back in bed when I felt the air mattress move. He curled up beside me and rolled me over into his arms.

"Now where were we before you decided to be so stubborn?" he smirked.

"Ha really funny Cullen, not completely all my fault. Remind me to get the girls back tomorrow for spying" I laughed.

"Deal, but no worries I have to get the guys back to. I found them on the other side of the Jeep watching us.

"Lovely I think our friends are nosy as hell. I wouldn't be surprised if they were listening now, except that it is raining. We should really give them something to talk about in the morning." I laughed.

"What did you have in mind?"

Single Mom

"Well I have on this adorable pair of boy shorts and the shirt covers them mostly. And I am guessing you have on boxers?"

"Um ya but what does that have to do with anything, besides the fact that I can just imagine how those look on you."

I playfully smacked his arm.

"What I am a guy, and you were the one explain what's under the covers not me" he laughed.

"True but anyway, your cloths are on the other side of the tents. You have to go by them all."

"Yes..."

"It would kill them to know what happened if you walked by all the tents in your boxers and I stepped out in this." I giggled.

"So true, brilliant idea Swan." He laughed.

"Thank you" I laughed.

"You seem tired now"

"I am. I am also kind of glad there is someone else in here with me. I hate sleeping alone."

"Me too"

"I guess when you get adjusted to sleeping with someone for so long it is hard to go back to sleeping alone."

"So true, I know exactly what you mean."

"Well goodnight Edward"

Single Mom

"Goodnight Bella" he said kissing me sweet and passionately one more time.

This could either work out two ways. One I would fall for him and get hurt, two we would work out as a couple. I would settle for dinner. Even if we do see each other again, things will be very slow.

I drifted off to sleep with Edwards arm across my stomach. He had fell asleep a soon as we had stopped talking.

I was woken up by vehicles pulling up. Who the hell was here this time of morning?

I shot up in the bed.

"What! What's going on?" Edward said sitting up in bed beside me. The covers fell revealing his gorgeous chest.

"Some ones here"

Horns started going off.

"what the hell is going on out there?" Edward asked.

"I think everyone else just showed up. I said jumping up and unzipping the tent. Edward was right behind me.

"Bellsy!" I heard a familiar husky voice.

"Jacob" I squealed running up to him and throwing my arms around him.

"hey Bella!, I heard Nessie.

"Ney Ness!" I said pulling back from Jacob.

"Bella I wish I was the one who got your attention first!" Quil said laughing.

Single Mom

"Hey Quil" I laughed.

"Um Bella you do realize you just ran out of your tent in your underwear?"
nessie said.

I felt my face turn bright red. I turned around to see Edward right behind me in his boxers.

"OH ya" I laughed

"What the hell did we miss! Jeez we stay busy a few weeks and I show up and you have someone coming out of your tent in boxers and you in underwear"
Jacob laughed.

"Ya Be right back" Edward laughed running to his tent. Everyone was coming out of their tents now. Well we at least the nosy people would see him running to get cloths.

"What the hell is going on? Emmet boomed.

"OK I know this looks insane" I started.

"YA just a little" Jacob cut me off.

"Ya well it started raining and Edward was talking to me about last night and He just crashed in my tent. This was the first time I saw him without his pants I swear. I was already changed and tucked in when he came in. I turned around so he could change. We were going to mess with you guys since you decided to spy last night. Then the horn started going off and we just jumped up and came running out."

Edward came back with a pair of shorts and a t shirt on. He handed me a pair of PJ pants. I pulled them on real quick.

"OK this is crazy everyone in their underwear. Why don't everyone get dressed and let me talk to my little sister and her... um friend." Jacob said covering his

eyes.

Ok so what did you think? was it worth waiting for? I have ch. 6 already started and I promis it will be up very very soon. No matter what i will post it I feel awful for making you guys wait. SO review and give me motivation and I will have it up faster. the more reviews I get the faster the updates will be. You guys rock my socks with allt he reviews favorites and story alerts! I think I have the best readers ever! ok got to get back to Ch. 6 so you guys wont kill me

Please review

Amy bee

Chapter 6

I am really sorry there were some errors in spelling and wording in ch. 5 I worked all night on trying to finish it up. I wrote so far and I had to leave were I did because I had lead into ch 6. So I cut it out and started on Ch. 6 last night also lol. I would have posted it sooner but I sent it to my dear friend Amber for her to proof read and check my errors. So if you see anything blame Amber lol JK JK Don't blame her. So here is ch. 6 I wanted to get it out for you devoted lovely readers since I took longer than I said on ch. 5. see ya at the bottom!

Ow ya I dont own twilight.

Single Mom

Ch. 6

Just a Swinging

"See you in a few Jake" Angela said running back to her tent.

Quill, Embry and Seth got busy unloading stuff. Jacob and Nessie followed me and Edward over to the chairs.

"Ok, wait a second, I didn't know you had a brother, and he was coming." Edward whispered in my ear as we sat down.

"Ok look he really isn't my brother, we grew up together. Our parents are best friends and so are we. We might as well be brother and sister. Jacob, I really do not appreciate that little act you pulled trying to be all protective. You are not Charlie and I am a grown woman with a child!" I glared at him.

Nessie died laughing "I tried to warn him about that fact before we even got here"

Single Mom

"Oh, So you knew they were up to something?" I raised my eyebrows at her.

"Yes, Angela called me yesterday and told me that they were all trying to fix you two up"

"Well thanks for warning me" I glared.

"Hey, not her fault back to explaining what's going on here" Jacob laughed.

"Damn, Jacob get over it already" I laughed

"Do you think it worked? Quill and Embry needed to be messed with" he laughed.

"Yes I think it worked and I also think you should get your ass up and go help" I laughed.

"Not until you introduce us" he smiled.

"Sorry Edward, that's Jacob and Renesmee. Jake, Nessie met Edward."

"Nice to meet you" Edward said sticking his hand out for Jacob. Jacob took it and shook it "You too"

"Let's get to work" Nessie said kissing him on the cheek and attempting to pull him towards her.

"Sorry about that" I said to Edward when they walked away.

"No problem Alice probably would have done the same thing if she hadn't set us up." He laughed.

"Ya speaking of that, did you know about this?" I glared.

"No, I figured they would try though." He smiled.

Single Mom

"Ya my crew is infamous for it." I laughed as they all started walking up fully dressed.

We all talked and the guys decided to make us breakfast. Us girls sat around and talked until breakfast was ready.

"Bella, please tell me you don't plan on walking around in my brothers PJ pants all day." Alice laughed.

"No I will change in a few. I didn't make any progress with the swing last night so I am going to go after breakfast."

"Ok what's up with this swing" Rose asked.

"It's awesome!" Angela giggled.

"Ya I mean the view is amazing" Jessica added.

"It is an old tire swing we hung years ago. It probably needs a new rope now. I brought a new one and a new tire just in case. I want to get it ready now that I am back for good. I plan on being here a lot more now. I have really missed it over the years"

"We are glad you are back. We missed you a lot Bells." Angela said.

"Yep we sure did." Jessica laughed.

She seemed so quiet lately. I must have missed something.

"Is everything ok with you lately Jessica I mean you have been a little distant this weekend." I smiled.

"Ya everything is amazing. I actually have some news for you. I want to wait for the guys to get done cooking though."

Single Mom

"Please tell me you're not pregnant! Are you?" Nessie added walking up with a cup of coffee for me and her.

"Lord no!"

We all sat and tried to figure out what her news was until breakfast was ready.

The guys had fixed scrambled eggs, bacon and fried cinnamon rolls. I was getting up to fix myself a plate when I was pushed back down in my chair.

"Here you go, no reason to get up" Edward said handing me a plate and took my coffee cup.

"Thanks" I said as he handed it back to me full. All the guys had fixed our plates. Kim, Ashley, and Clair pulled up and had joined us right before. Edward sat down beside me with his plate.

We finished breakfast and sat and talked awhile longer. Edward had pulled my legs up into his lap when we were done eating. He was rubbing my calf slowly.

"Ok so some of us haven't heard why you and Edward came out of your tent in your underwear" Erin giggled.

"It was raining too hard for me to go to my tent after talking to her about all of the nosy people last night" He chuckled.

"And neither one of us saw each other in our underwear until we were outside. I was already changed and under the covers when he came in. I rolled over while he was changing. Plus, we figured you guys would be wondering why Edward was running across the field in his boxers towards his tent. We never planned on everyone else waking us up. I was going to step out long enough to make you all wonder even more." I laughed.

"Well you defiantly had us wondering" Angela laughed.

Single Mom

"Ya I think you guys showing up made it even better. The looks on their faces was priceless." Edward laughed.

"Ya, Glad you got even somewhat" Jasper laughed.

"Well you guys it has been fun and all but I have to get changed and find the swing" I giggled and went to get dressed.

I came out of the tent to find everyone waiting on me. Emmet had the tire and Jasper had the rope.

"All of you are coming?" I laughed.

"Hell ya Ben, Angela, Eric, Jessica, and Mike told us all about it." Jasper said smiling.

"Well let's go. I want to actually get to swing on it at some point if we need to fix it."

We all set off on the way to the swing. It was about a mile hike. Everyone was paired off leaving Edward and I walking together. We walked quietly, stealing glances at each other. We laughed and chatted with our friends as we went, but the conversation between Edward and I was fairly silent.

We finally walked up to the bluff that the swing was on.

"You guys forgot to tell us it was on a bluff!" Erin squealed.

"This place is beautiful" Alice said.

"Ya almost as beautiful as its owner" Edward said softly in my ear so only I could hear.

"Thanks" I said blushing.

He smiled with that crooked smile.

Single Mom

"I think it defiantly needs a new rope" Jasper said pulling on the rope slightly. It started tearing with just the small amount he pulled.

"Don't stop pulling now. Might as well go ahead and get it down." I laughed.

He pulled two or three more times and it crashed to the ground. The tree was still in great condition. The limb was a very large limb and could even hold Emmet up.

"So how are we getting it back up there?" Emmet asked.

"Good question, maybe we can try tying it to a rock and throwing it over?" I decided.

"Maybe, If not someone will have to climb it up" Edward grinned.

I decided not to even ask why he seemed so happy.

They tried throwing the rope up and it never would catch enough to come on over.

"Looks like I am going up" Edward smiled happily.

"What, are you crazy?" I asked.

"No, Edward is an avid climber. He use to rock climb quite regularly before the demon ex pulled him away from it." Alice said leaning closer to me so only me Nessie and Angela heard.

"Oh, but trees are different" I said.

"Not really he is just as good with them as he is with a mountain side." She giggled.

While we were talking Edward was already half way up the tree with the rope tied around his waist. He tied the rope perfectly.

Single Mom

"Do I have to come down?" he wined.

"Yes, Edward I will make a deal I will babysit next week and you and Jasper can go rock climbing" She laughed.

"Deal!" Edward and Jasper said at the same time.

Edward came down and all the guys had decided to go rock climbing.

"Looks like it is just us girls Wednesday night" Rose said to us all

"Yep" we said in unison.

"Hey at least they won't be at my house playing video games" Angela smiled.

"Oh ya Jessica what's your news? I believe Kim, Ashley and Clair distracted us." I pointed out.

"Mike come on time and tell them!" she giggled.

The guys walked over and plopped down beside us on the ground.

"Ok, go ahead you have our attention" Angela said.

"Well no one gets mad that we haven't told you before now. We wanted to tell everyone together."

"Ok spit it out already I want to swing at some point" I laughed.

"Well last week Mike and I took a trip to Seattle together. It was really romantic." She said turning and smiling at Mike, taking his hand. She dug in her pocket and pulled out a ring.

"OH MY GOD" Angela said.

"We are getting married!" Jessica squealed putting her engagement ring on.

Single Mom

"OH MY GOD" I said looking at Angela.

"Details!" screamed Nessie and Kim.

"Ya" Angela and I added still in a little shock.

"Well we were at dinner in that really nice restaurant in the Space Needle. He was so sweet. He had the ring dropped in my Champagne glass." She giggled.

"Wow, Mike is a romantic" Ben laughed.

"I have my moments" he laughed.

We all congratulated them and chatted as the guys went back to hanging the tire.

"Ok, Bella it's ready" Ben said.

"Finally!" I squealed.

"Ok, so who is going with me?"

"I want to go with Ben!" Angela said.

"I'm going with Mike."

"Let me guess everyone is going with their boyfriend or husband?" I said cocking my eyebrow.

"I think they are sticking us together again" Edward said walking up beside me.

"Sorry" they giggled.

"Kiss my ass you dweebs" I laughed taking Edwards hand and climbing into the big swing.

Single Mom

"You guys ready?" Emmet laughed from behind us.

"Ya" we said.

And off we went flying. I was sitting in Edwards lap; one of his arms was wrapped around my waist.

We swung out over the bluff above the creek several times. It was a huge adrenalin rush considering the bluff was about thirty feet high.

"Wow this is awesome" Edward laughed as we swung out over the creek again.

"Ya it's awesome, close your eyes and you feel like you're flying" I laughed.

We finally stopped and let everyone else take a turn. It was about one thirty when we had all took a turn.

"I'm starving" Emmet said.

"Ya, me to" Ben added.

We decided to head back and grab lunch. We all went back and grabbed a sandwich.

When we were all done Seth went to get there bag of cloths out of the car and put them in the tent. He was beside the tent when he heard something moving.

He looked in the window and screamed.

"Dude what the hell is going on" Jacob asked running over with Ashley.

"There is a damn skunk in our tent!" he yelled.

"Oh shit dude it stinks!" Edward said as he got over there.

"Did it spray you honey?" Ashley asked trying not to laugh.

Single Mom

"No but I think it got the tent when I screamed" He said backing away from the tent.

"We are we going to sleep tonight?" Ashley asked.

"Hell if I know!" Seth said.

"At least your cloths and stuff were not in there yet" I laughed.

"True" Seth said finally laughing.

"Edward, why don't you give them your tent?" Alice asked.

"Where would I sleep?" he asked slyly. He knew what she was up to of course.

"With Bella" the whole group rang out in unison laughing.

"So did someone plant the skunk to get us in the same tent again?" I laughed.

"No, it is clearly mother nature doing it for use" Rose laughed.

"Whatever, Edward go grab your bag, your crashing with me again" I laughed.

"Ok fine" he shrugged and ran to get his bag. He seemed excited about staying with me.

"Make sure to zip the tent back I don't want anything in my tent!" I yelled after him laughing.

"Sure thing" he laughed.

We spent the rest of the day riding dirt bikes and relaxing. Jacob and them had brought a few dirt bikes up and we all took turns. When I was done with that I found my chair by the fire the guys had started and picked up my book.

I was two chapters in when Edward came and sat down beside me.

Single Mom

"Hey beautiful, looks like you need a new copy of Withering Heights" He laughed.

"It's my favorite, and yes I probably should get a new copy." I giggled.

We sat and talked for the rest of the afternoon. We had all fixed dinner together and played a few games. I had actually picked dare this time and I had to kiss Edward, making me blush.

I was changing when Edward came in.

"OH I'm sorry Bella I thought you would be done by now." He said turning around quickly. I was in another pair of boy shorts and my bra. I quickly pulled on my Wife beater tank.

"It's ok, it was just a bra, and you have seen me in boy shorts already" I laughed.

"Ya but I didn't mean to walk in on you" he said walking over and wrapping his arms around my waist.

"It's ok, we are camping in the same tent so it probably would have happened sooner or later" I giggled. I was usually very self conscious. But I wasn't around Edward. It may have had something to do with his constant compliments.

"True" He said softly, kissing me. The kiss was soft but passionate.

"Hey Bella... "I heard Erin say as the tent door flew open.

"Um yes" I giggled looking around Edward.

"Sorry, I was wondering if I could borrow a tank top. Eric's toothpaste got all over mine" she said blushing.

"Ya, no problem" I giggled and grabbed an extra tank and tossed it to her.

Single Mom

"Thanks, just for that you get a warning, They will be listening closely" she winked and left the tent.

"Shall we mess with them in about ten minutes" I winked.

"We shall" he laughed and put me on the bed tickling me.

"Ok... Ok... stop" I laughed.

"Ok fine but this is all your fault" he laughed rolling off of me.

"What is all my fault?" I said giving him a questioning look.

"That I can't keep my hands off of you" he smiled and kissed me.

"What did I do?" I giggled when he was through kissing me.

"You just look so damn hot"

Thank goodness it was pretty dark in here, because my face turned bright red.

"I think you are just full of it" I laughed.

"Whatever" he said pulling me on top of him and wrapping his arms around me. I was giggling again. He quickly made me stop giggling by kissing me chastely.

The camp ground was silent now except for a few giggles from the girls and the guys hushing them.

"Ready" I whispered.

Edward nodded in agreement. I decided to roll off of him to make it less awkward.

"Oh Edward!" I moaned out loud, trying to make it sound as real as I could.

Single Mom

I could see him smile. Catching on to what I was doing. He let out a loud moan for all to hear.

"Oh! YA Right there" I threw in a few seconds later.

"Oh Bella you feel so good" Edward said trying not to laugh.

"OH MY GOD, CAN YOU TWO PLEASE STOP! You are right beside our tent jeez" Jessica laughed.

"FOR REAL GET A ROOM NOT A TENT!" I heard Emmet laugh.

"Serves all of you right for being nosy" we laughed. Everyone was dying laughing now.

The laughing finally dies away leavening the campsite quiet again. I rolled over and snuggled into my pillows.

I was almost in dream land when I felt Edward snake his arms around me and start kissing my neck where my hair had fallen, leaving it exposed. It felt amazing. Everywhere his skin and lips touched me a fire started within.

I let a light moan escape from my lips making Edward chuckle.

"What was that for?" I whispered.

"I just wanted to tell you goodnight and you look absolutely mouthwatering lying there." He was rolling me over on my back.

"Well, thank you. Goodnight to you too." I giggled. Before wrapping my arms around his neck and pulling him back to me. Our lips pressed together sending electricity through my body. My hands entwined with his hair effortlessly. His hand went up and down the side of my body, softly grazing the side of my breast sending chills all over me.

We were pulled away from each other by another giggle from Jessica.

Single Mom

"What now" I snapped kind of rudely at the interruption.

"Tents side by side we can defiantly tell you two are doing something" Mike laughed, causing another wave of laughter throughout the campsite.

"I guess we better get to sleep" Edward whispered in my ear with a slight laugh, sending chills down my spine again.

"Ya that's probably a good idea" I giggled and turned back to snuggling my pillow.

He wrapped his arms around me and pulled me close. He was obviously very turned on but he would have to deal. There was no way in hell I was going there right now, especially not in a tent right beside Mike and Jessica.

I loved Loved Loved your reviews for 5! You guys rock! I hope I am going to be a little greedy and ask for more on this chapter! lol i know right. But I did work my booty off to get it up for you guys. And I really like it. Plus theres Edward kisses in it!

Ch. 7 is alreday going and halfway through. So review like crazy and I will have it up quicker. I do answer my reviews as much as I can. I love talking to you.

hope to get a review from you. Oh and thanks for all the favs and alerts!

Amy Bee

Chapter 7

Here is chapter 7! I really love hearing from you guys thanks for all the wonderful reviews. Maybe you can get others to review lol.

I do not own twilight:(

See u at the bottom!

Single Mom

Ch. 7

Back to Reality

I woke up still in Edwards arms.

"Good morning" he smiled.

"Good morning" I smiled back. I had slept better these past two nights than I have in years. I stretched out and he wrapped his arms around me tighter pulling me into a very passionate kiss. My arms went around his neck and I was lost in his kiss.

Once again we were pulled from our embrace by someone.

It was Jacob outside telling us to come eat. We reluctantly agreed and joined the others.

We spent the day swinging and spending time with our friends. Occasionally Edward would steal a kiss by pulling me behind a tree or when no one was looking.

WE finally had everything taken down and packing in the vehicles.

Single Mom

"Oh By the way, I am not going to be able to babysit tomorrow, I have to go into court." Erin came up to say.

"That's fine, I completely understand, thanks for offering anyway" I said giving her a hug. She was riding back with the guys.

"Sorry Bella I can't either Mike's grandmother is flying in and I have to go pick her up. I am the only one who could get free. I am really sorry"

"It's fine." I laughed

"Um Bella would you completely hate me if I couldn't watch her either?"

"Of course not Angela."

"Oh thank goodness. I got the text while ago that I have to go in for an interview at the hospital tomorrow." She smiled.

"That's great!" I squealed she had just finished up her last class and was graduating in two weeks. She was taking her boards next weekend.

"Ya but who is going to watch Macie while you are job hunting?" She asked. Leave it to her to think of someone else but herself.

"I can put it off a day or so if I need to." I smiled. I would be ok a few more weeks.

"We could babysit!" Alice said happily.

"Ya I had planned on being with her tomorrow anyway. We are watching Emily while Edward takes care of some things around town." Rose said happily.

I just looked at Edward.

Single Mom

"Do you mind if I think about it for a little while? I will let you know later tonight" I said. I wasn't sure it would be a good thing the girls met when Edward and I hadn't even been on a date.

"Sure just let me know." She said handing me a card's with her and Rosie's cell numbers on it.

"Thanks. We should get going I have to pick Macie up in Port Angeles before I can get back to Forks for the night." I laughed. Jessica and Angela went to kiss the guys goodbye.

"You're going to be in Port Angeles later?" Edward asked while we had a moment alone.

"Yes I have to pick Macie up at my mother's"

"Well do you think you can have her watch her a little longer?"

"Depends on why?"

"Well I was hoping you would go to dinner with me tonight. It wouldn't be anything major since it is actually my restaurant. I have to go in for a few hours as soon as I leave here."

"I thought you were a musician?" I said a little confused.

"I am. I am working on several different things but the piano player for tonight can't be there so I have to do it myself. Plus I have some business I have to take care of. So are you interested?" he smiled.

"Let me get Jessica and Angela dropped off and call Renee."" I smiled back. I would love to have dinner alone with him tonight.

He kissed me on last time and left me with his number.

Single Mom

When we finally pulled out of the campsite and locked the gate Jessica and Angela were all talk about Edward and I.

"Ok I want every detail imaginable!" Jessica gushed.

"Jeez jess there really isn't anything to tell. We kissed a few times and he has asked me to dinner. And speaking of dinner I am going to have to ask you two to be quiet while I call Renee" I laughed.

"Ok but we want full details as soon as you hang up the phone" Angela said giggling.

I rolled my eyes knowing I would have to give every detail now that they would over hear my conversation with Renee.

"Hey mom, how is Macie"

"She is fine, getting into everything and chasing Phil around right now" she laughed. I could hear my daughter laughing in the background.

"Remind her to slow down and not fall"

"Bella she is fine, so are you on your way back"

"Yes actually, but I wanted to know if you could watch her for a few more hours tonight, maybe get her in bed? I will stay there tonight, but I kind of have been asked to dinner"

"Oh by a guy?" she asked with a new edge of excitement in her voice.

"Yes the ever so infamous people I call my friends and his friends and family decided to set us up. We have been hanging out all weekend and he really wants me to hear him play at his restaurant tonight. And before you ask nothing serious or anything it is just dinner" I laughed. Jessica and Angela were giggling wildly now.

Single Mom

"Well is he cute"

"Yes very" I laughed.

"Well in that case stay out as late as you want and ruffle your feathers. It has been way to long since you have been on a date." She laughed.

"Thanks for the help mom."

"See you later" she said happily before hanging up the phone.

I filled the girls in before I dropped them off.

I called Edward to let him know I would be able to go. He was happy I was coming. He also wanted me to call Alice for some reason; he said he had no idea what about. I was guessing it was about babysitting.

"Alice Hale" She answered.

"Hey, it's Bella"

"Oh hey, I am so glad you called. Are you going to let me keep Macie tomorrow?" I could feel her bouncing through the phone.

"Well I guess. I was just not too sure on the girls meeting since me and Edward have only really hung out."

"Oh come on he asked you to come hear him play so you will defiantly be meeting Emily soon. Besides Rose and I are your friends now to. Whatever happens between you and Edward does, it doesn't affect us" she giggled.

"Well thanks; I see no problem in letting you keep her. I will call you in the morning to get directions. I really need to try and find something to wear to dinner tonight."

"Need any help?"

Single Mom

"I probably should say yes here but I think I can find something."

"Were you at?"

"Pulling into my dad's in Forks to get cleaned up and changed before I head to Port Angeles"

"Chief Swan's right?"

"Yap" I said popping my p and climbing out of my truck.

"Be there soon, and I am not taking no for an answer. Just be showered and shaved by the time rose and I get there. We are at my shop right now what size are you?"

I was not going to win this one. Mental not: never tell Alice you are trying to find something to wear. I told her my size's and headed in the house.

I told Charlie what was going on and headed to the shower. I let the water pound on my shoulders. After spending the weekend in the woods, I was happy to see my shower.

I stepped out and wrapped myself in a towel.

"Bella come on we don't have all day" Alice was yelling from the other side of the door.

"Who in their right mind let the cracked out pixie in" I yelled back laughing.

"You must really want to look like a clown" Rose laughed as I stepped out to a glaring Alice.

"Hey don't give me that look. You were the one demanding me to come out like I was a robber and you were a cop" I laughed finally making her crack a smile.

Single Mom

"Ya well don't call me a pixie again." She said pulling me in my bedroom. Damn for someone so little she was strong.

"Ya sorry we kind of failed to tell you that once Alice gets a chance to play makeover, well you have no choice" Rose laughed.

"Thanks for warning me now" I laughed as I was forced in the chair.

Three hours later I was finally able to look in the mirror.

My hair was pinned up with Shirley temple curls falling loosely out of the pile out curls. MY makeup was light and soft. I was glowing.

"Oh my Goodness" I said in shock.

"Do you like it?" Alice bounced.

"I love it!" I smiled happily at her and Rose.

"Great! Now time to get you dressed you are going to have to get going soon" Rose laughed. I followed her into my bedroom.

"We will be waiting down stairs!" Alice said following Rose out the door. I had no clue what kind of restaurant Edward on so I was kind of glad Rose and Alice were here.

I walked over to the bed to a white dress bag that had Hale Designs on it in gold lettering.. I unzipped it and it was a gorgeous dark blue dress. It was strapless with and empire waist and came about mid thigh. I slipped on the silver heels and headed down stairs.

"Wow honey you look amazing" Dad said.

"Thanks, but Alice and Rose did all the work" I laughed doing a little twirl.

Rose and Alice high fived "We do good sister-in-law" Rose laughed.

Single Mom

"Wait... what"

"Duh Jasper is her brother" Alice laughed.

"Ah ok makes since. I owe you two big time."

"Nah you are letting us keep Macie tomorrow and giving Emily someone to play with her age. Plus you are going on a date with my brother." Alice laughed.

"Thanks so much" I said hugging them before I headed out the door.

I stopped at Renee's to kiss Macie good night and let her see me all dressed up. Macie giggled wildly and told me I looked like a princess before I left.

I was pulling up to the restaurant now, Alice had given me directions. Jaspers bike was parked on the curb. It was a very nice Italian restaurant. I was nervous all of a sudden.

I really liked Edward from what I knew of him and I wanted to get the chance to know him more. But I didn't want anything serious or fast. Alice seemed to think Edward really liked me since he wanted me to hear him play. What am I thinking I shouldn't even be considering dating?

I decided to shake my worries off. It was just dinner after all.

Edward was at the door talking to the hostess. She was looking at him with bright eyes and smile. She obviously wanted to jump him.

"Bella wow, you look amazing" he said walking over to me and kissing me softly on the lips.

"Thanks I just happened to slip up and tell your sister I wasn't sure what I was going to wear" I laughed nervously.

Single Mom

"Oh ya forgot to tell you. She loves to play dress up. But you look amazing, not that you haven't looked amazing all weekend. It's just ... Wow" he laughed sounding just as nervous as I did.

"Thanks" I said blushing.

"Come on I have a table for us in the back corner." He smiled taking my hand and leading me through the restaurant. The hostess was looking at me with a very astonished look on her face.

"What's up with the hostess" as I noticed several of the waitresses were also giving us the same look. "And everyone else for that matter" I laughed.

"They have never seen me with someone besides Rose, Alice, Emily or my mother." He smiled as he pulled the chair out for me.

"Thank you"

"You're welcome" he said taking the seat beside me. Our backs were against the wall. We had a perfect view of the whole restaurant. The piano was sitting right in the center.

"So I am the first women you have brought in here?" I asked curious.

"Besides family and friends yes, I bought this place a few years ago when Tonya and I split up for the first time. My mother has taken care of it for me. I would come in as often as I could until now. We both take care of it now."

"Wow don't I feel special." I smiled.

"You should, I don't let just anyone hear me play either." He winked as a waitress brought us a bottle of wine and glasses.

"I hope you don't mind I took the liberty of having them bring us our best"

"Well thank you"

Single Mom

"No problem, it is my favorite so that was a perk. So what are you in the mood to eat tonight?"

"Everything looks really good, I have no Idea."

"Well I could always surprise you. My chief is amazing"

"Sounds fine to me"

"I will be right back then" he said kissing me on the cheek and disappearing into the kitchen for a few moments.

"That was quick" I laughed as he came to sit back down.

"Yes, he knows me all too well. Dessert is also a surprise." He laughed.

"Excuse me" A beautiful woman dressed white slacks with a Champaign top and heels said.

"Oh hi mom" Edward smiled up at her.

"Hey sorry to interrupt but it is time for you to play real quick."

"Thanks, Esme this is Bella, Bella this is my mother Esme." He said.

"Very nice to meet you sweetie, do you mind if I join you while he is playing?" she smiled warmly.

"Nice to meet you to, I don't mind at all."

Edward kissed us both on the cheek and stepped up to the piano.

"You have the best seat in the house" she smiled.

"I see, he warned me I should feel special" I laughed.

Single Mom

"You should, he has never brought anyone here and Alice told me he asked you to come here him play." She smiled.

He started playing the most beautiful tune I had ever heard. He was absolutely amazing.

"So she says, but I am starting to think I am luckier than you say. He rock climbs, plays the piano and has a daughter." I whispered to her.

"He is very multi talented; Emily is what his world revolves around. This song is actually hers. He wrote it for her a few years ago. He told me you have a daughter as well, Macie right?"

"Yes I do. He told you about me?" I was pretty shocked he had said anything. He was turning out to be the complete opposite than my original thought.

"Oh yes, Edward tells me everything. He likes you a lot I can tell. And from everything I have heard and seen I do too" she smiled.

"Thank you" I smiled back.

Edward finished up playing Emily's song about the time the waitress brought our dinner.

"Well dear it has been lovely talking to you and I look forward to seeing you tomorrow. Alice called and said I would get to meet the lovely Macie tomorrow"

"Oh yes, she offered to keep her so I could go job hunting."

"Yes she told me something about that. Do you mind if I ask what kind of job you are looking for?"

"No not at all. I was hoping to get on at the hospital. I am a physical therapy assistant."

Single Mom

"Oh that's wonderful. I will be sure to tell my husband you are coming. He is a doctor there and is also on the board"

"It wouldn't happen to be Doctor Carlisle Cullen would it?" I smiled finally realizing were I knew the last name from.

"Well yes it is, how did you know?"

"My daughter inherited my gracefulness. We have seen him several times." I smiled.

"Well I am sure you won't have a problem at all then" she laughed.

"Thanks" I laughed with her. Edward came and joined us after having to speak with a few guest.

"What are you two talking about?"

"She knows your father from her daughter's frequent ER visits. And of course I was telling her horrendous baby stories about you" she laughed.

"Thanks for the help there mom" he laughed.

"You know I am joking I will at least save those for a few more dates. I will let you two get back to your dinner. I have a few things I have to take care of before I leave"

We said our goodbyes and enjoyed our dinner.

The restaurant was empty now and we were on our third bottle of wine.

"I really shouldn't have drunk so much." I giggled.

"Well we can walk to the apartment I keep here and you can let Renee know you can be their first thing in the morning" Edward offered.

Single Mom

"I might just have to do that I wouldn't trust myself to drive anywhere at this point" I laughed.

Edward pulled me closer. We had been lounging at our table since the restaurant emptied out. He kissed me softly on the lips. It wasn't a quick kiss; we were still lingering in the moment.

"Come on let's get out of here" He whispered helping me up.

We were walking hand in hand, Edwards's jacket wrapped around my shoulders.

"You know you look even better in my jacket" He smiled.

"Well thank you" I giggled.

"So you have an apartment here?" I asked.

"Ya, I keep a small one here for nights I have to work at the restaurant."

"I guess that comes in handy" My mind immediately went back to thinking he could have any woman he wanted.

"Yes but you will be the first woman to see it besides family and friends" he laughed. Was I that readable?

"Not sure I believe you be oh well" I giggled.

"Then I guess I will just have to show you" He laughed and swooped me off my feet walking towards an older downtown building.

"What are you doing" I laughed.

"Giving you a ride to the apartment" he laughed.

"You're apartment is here?" I asked a little confused.

Single Mom

"Yes, you will see" he laughed setting me down in a freight elevator. He opened the doors. I was thinking we had gone up three levels.

The apartment was not really an apartment. It was more like a flat.

"This is it" he shrugged walking in and setting a bag he had brought from the restaurant.

"This place is awesome." I laughed. The décor was very modern. Black furniture with light blue accents, the walls were white brick and it was completely open. There was a very large screen divider separating what I imagined to be the bedroom area.

"Thanks', Esme and Alice did the decorating. We all use it at times, but it is mine. Emily has her own bedroom here I closed off when I first bought the place."

"That's cool" I said as he was unpacking the bag he had brought. He had two more bottles of wine and a box.

I decided to text Renee instead of call, to keep from waking Macie. She was fine with the idea.

Edward poured us a glass of wine and brought the box and two forks to the couch I was sitting on.

"What's that?" I asked very curious.

"Well Ms. Swan it is dessert" he wiggled his eyebrows at me making me giggle.

So hey, what did you think? Just wanted to remind you that Bella and Edwards relationship is very slow paced. They both like each other but are scared of relationships. just keep that marked in your brains. Next Chapter is the night at Edwards and the meeting of the kids. Yes the kids come into play early on. But Edward and Bella's world revolve around their children. This is

Single Mom

there first free weekend in a long time. I hadn't planed on wrighting out of Bella's character but I will give you the option. Do you want me to add a few different Point of views or do you want it to saty as is?

Just review and let me know!

Thanks bunches

Amy Bee :)

Chapter 8

hey everyone! Just wanted to say sorry i haven't updated all weekend. I was having a few problems writing the lemon. But here it is. I also wanted to let you know that I have someone editing this story. As soon as they are done the original will come down and the edited version will go up. Ch 9 is on its way also should be up soon! Please dont forget to review lol

I don't own twilight

Single Mom

Ch. 8

Dessert

"So what kind of dessert?" I asked scooting closer to try and get a look.

"Do you like chocolate?" he laughed.

"Well I am a woman so yes" I laughed.

"Well do you like cheesecake?"

"Love it" I smiled.

"How about dark chocolate?"

"Yum" I laughed.

"Can I surprise you on what's in her then?" he said smiling.

"I am so not big on surprises but you can hand over the box" I giggled.

"See I can't do that" He was being very sly. I had a very nice buzz going and I

Single Mom

wanted the chocolate.

"I could always take it from you" I giggled playfully.

"See now this would go over a lot easier if you would just let me surprise you" he smiled that crooked smile.

"Well I know three things it could possibly have in it or be. Plus I am sitting right beside you, which takes the surprise out of it." I pointed out.

He pulled out a scarf "No not really" he laughed.

"So you are saying you want to blind fold me?" I glared cautiously.

"Exactly" he smiled brightly.

"OH I do not like that idea"

"Come on it will be fun, besides you won't have it on long" he laughed.

"Fine but not long" I said.

He tied the scarf around my head covering my eyes.

I could hear the box open but was completely blind. The smell was delicious.

"Open up" he said softly in an alluring voice next to my ear sending chills down my spine.

I did as he asked. He slid the most divine bite I had ever had into my mouth. I hadn't realized it was letting a little moan slip out until I heard him chuckle. My face had to be bright red.

"Do you like it?"

Single Mom

"Like is not a strong enough word for that" I giggled. "Can this thing come of now?"

"Yes I just wanted to see your reaction without knowing what it was" he laughed and slipped the scarf from around my eyes.

I had the flavor of creamy New York style cheesecake, rich chocolate mousse and dark chocolate ganache lingering on my taste buds.

"What in the world is that, I have an instant addiction to it now?" I laughed.

"Chocolate Mousse Cheesecake, it is a lush layer of creamy New York style cheesecake, joined with a layer of rich chocolate mousse and covered with dark chocolate ganache. Esme is the creator. She already had it waiting on us when I ordered dinner" he smiled.

"Remind me to keep her close. That thing is absolutely sinful, and the best thing I have ever tasted."

"You can tell her tomorrow. Alice and Rose are watching the girls at our house, and she won't be coming in to the restaurant."

"Deal" I said taking another bite.

We finished off the rest of the piece of cheesecake.

We were now chatting randomly about our daughters. Sharing stories of the unique things they do.

"Would you like something more comfortable?" he smiled.

"I would love that" I was past ready to get out of the dress.

"Be right back" he said disappearing behind the screen.

"Sorry, all I could find was one of my t shirts and a pair of boxers" he laughed.

Single Mom

"Thanks, this will work fine." I laughed and headed for the bathroom. I Slipped out of the dress and Pulled on the t shirt and boxers. His shirt smelt amazing.

He was lounging across the couch in a t shirt and Pj pants when I came out.

"You look comfortable" I laughed.

"Very, want to join me?" he smiled playfully.

I walked over and sat on him. He was laid across the couch after all. He tickled me making me squirm and laugh.

"It's not my fault you were taking up the whole couch." I laughed catching my breath.

"And it isn't my fault you are so light that it didn't faze me" He smiled playfully. I thought about bouncing up and down on him just to get a reaction but thought better of it. "I think you are tipsy" he said playfully.

"Well I have had a lot of wine, and I think you are to" I laughed.

He pulled me down on top of him "maybe I am".

"You better not keep me awake all night I have things to do tomorrow" I laughed.

He flipped us over and was now hovering over me.

"I will try my best not to but you are making it very hard to avoid" He smiled. I could feel his erection on my inner thigh.

"I have no idea what you are talking about; I am sweet and innocent here." I decided to play along and tease him. I was very attracted to Edward but I still had my doubts. I was not sure I wanted anything complicated or serious. My love life tended to lean more towards the screwed up side than the amazing.

Single Mom

"That's why you are teasing so much Ms. Sweet and Innocent?" He laughed kissing me chastely on the lips.

"You are the one kissing me, so how am I teasing?" I giggled.

"You look absolutely amazing in my cloths. I am trying very hard right now not to pick you up and take you to the bed."

"Hmmm, and what shall we do about this little predicament?" I teased lightly.

He wanted me and I wanted him. We were both fairly tipsy but it didn't matter. I liked him; he liked me there really was nothing more to think about right now. Tomorrow we could talk about what this was. But tonight all I wanted was him.

"I'm not too sure. Really depends on what you have in mind" he laughed.

"I'm the innocent one remember. You are the one on top of me" I smiled sweetly and rubbed my foot up his leg.

"Ya ok" he said before he kissed me. There was no holding back now. His tongue ran across my bottom lip. I could feel the fire igniting within.

Before I realized what I was doing I had a hand tangled in his hair and I was rubbing my hand over his chest. His hand was rubbing up and down my side, slightly grazing my breast. I lightly nipped his lip, making him grab a hold of my hip and pull me closer to him. I could feel his member pressing against my center. Our hands were everywhere.

He slightly pulled the hair at the back of my neck. I moaned in pleasure as he took the opportunity to nibble on my ear and make his way down my neck. When he reached the top of the t shirt he made his way back up. His hand was rubbing up my stomach under the shirt. He barley grazed my breast before descending.

I wanted this man more than anything.

Single Mom

I wrapped my legs around his trying to pull him closer. I didn't just want him, I needed him.

He pulled us up from the couch without taking his lips from mine. I wrapped my legs tighter around his waist.

I was now on the bed. I tugged at his shirt; I wanted to see his amazing chest. He quickly got the idea and helped me get him free. I ran my hands over his chest and into his hair pulling him back for another passionate kiss. He broke away and our cloths started coming off.

We were both completely mad with desire, our lips constantly touching the other.

He ran his tongue from just below my ear to my breast, stopping to suck and nibble.

I couldn't take anymore I had to have him now.

"I can't take anymore" I panted.

Without a word he made his way back to my lips. His member was pressed against my sex.

"Good, I can't either" he whispered as he slid into me. My body arched and a moan slipped through my lips. He thrust in and out of me slowly before fastening his pace sending quakes of pleasure to my core.

Our lips were crashing with each other and kissing and nibbling the others neck. I ran my finger nails down his back as I felt the tension starting to release.

I was on the verge of the biggest orgasm of my life. I had never experience anything like this before. The way h touched me, the way he kissed me, even the way he looked into my eyes made me want him. Were ever his skin touched my skin tingled.

Single Mom

He let out a moan just as I started falling over the edge. He thrust deeper within me giving me the finally push. I was floating on a cloud when he relaxed above me nuzzling into my neck.

"You are amazing" he whispered into my neck sending chills down my body.

"I thought the same about you" I laughed trying to catch my breath. He kissed me soundly before rolling over on his side, me still in his arms.

We drifted off to sleep with out another word.

When I woke up, I could tell it was still fairly early. I was covered under a plush blanket still nude from the night before. Edward was not in bed with me.

Great that was exactly how I wanted to start my day. A one night stand, with a man who's sister was babysitting for me in a few hours. This was exactly what I should have avoided. MY love life had always been complicated and screwed up. Now I screwed up and sleep with a man. I had no worries about birth control but what about STD'S. I had the IUD put in three years ago so I was fine on pregnancy scares.

I sat up and bed and made sure to wrap the blanket around me. I might as well go find me dress and shoes and get the hell out of here.

I hadn't paid attention for noise in the apartment or smell. I was too preoccupied with my thoughts. When I came around the screen into the spacious living area there he was cooking. He was wearing a simple pair of boxers and a t shirt with the sleeves cut off.

"Well good morning sleepy head" He said smiling at me.

"Um... good morning" I managed to get out. I had a headache probably from the amount of wine I had drunk the night before.

"Here take these it will go away and breakfast will be ready soon." He said kissing me on the cheek and handing me two Tylenol.

Single Mom

"Thanks, I thought you had left or something I was coming to get my dress and shoes"

"Nope, but I thought you might be hungry." He said flipping a waffle out of the waffle iron and pouring another.

"Actually I am now that I think about it. Smells great by the way, I'm just going to get dress real quick" I smiled heading off to the bathroom.

We were just finishing up the amazing breakfast when he started.

"Bella I don't want you to think last night was something I normally do. It was very unlike me."

"Ya wasn't something I would normally do either" I smirked. I wasn't sure if he was talking about sleeping with me and regretting it or just the situation in general. God I hoped he didn't regret me. Damnit Bella what are you doing? Have you lost your mind? There is no room in your life for a man, especially one like Edward. You will just get crushed again.

"I didn't think you would either, I don't regret it one bit. I don't know what came over me though. I just wanted you to know that I defiantly plan to do it again." He smiled and kissed me on cheek.

Damn it why did he have to say the perfect things. This would probably be better if it was a one night stand, now he wants to see me again.

"Me either, but let's just take this really slow and see where it goes. I mean you have a daughter and so do I. I am wanting to get my career up and going and besides I haven't had the best of luck in my relationships."

"My sentiments exactly, I mean Emily is everything then I have the restaurant so I know what you mean." He laughed.

Ok if we were going to attempt anything then it was going to be what we wanted it to be. Slow and easy, no pressures just see where it goes. I could

Single Mom

handle that.

We walked back to the restaurant to get our vehicles and said our goodbyes before going our separate ways.

When I arrived at Renee's she wanted details. I told her we agreed to figure out whatever it was as time went by but that we were just dating somewhat and seeing were things would go. She seemed content enough for now. I knew I would have to explain more later. I got dressed in the outfit I had decided earlier in the week. I dressed Macie in a pair of leggings with a little skirt over the top and a long sleep rocker T. She was happy to wear her hot pink ballet shoes. They had little black silk bows on the toes. She was my little rock star.

We were on our way to Forks when Alice called.

"Hey Alice" I said picking up the phone.

"Hey are you on your way yet?" I could tell she was bouncing on the other end of the line.

"Yes I am about twenty minutes from Forks." I could hear a little girl singing loudly in the background. That must have been Emily.

"I will meet you at the end of the drive way. You will see my Yellow car. You are about ten minutes away. You will never find it unless I am waiting for you" she laughed.

"Ok thanks, see you soon" I laughed before shutting my phone.

"You ready to meet some new friends baby girl?" I asked my daughter.

"Yap" she giggled.

"You will have a little girl your age to play with today" I smiled at her through the rear view mirror"

Single Mom

"YA!" she squealed happily.

"Mommy is going to go look for a job today sweetie. I want you to promise and be a good girl today ok, and please be careful"

"Ok mommy. If you get a job does that mean I can go to school and get my sand box!" she was too smart for her own good. She had been wanting to go to school and have a sand box. I had told her if I got a job I would see.

"We will see honey" I said laughing to myself.

Sure enough Alice was waiting in a bright yellow Porsche. She waved and pulled down the drive way letting me follow. She was right I would have never found the place without her assistance. We finally came to a clearing to a massive house. It was beautiful. There was a large porch on the front that looked like it wrapped around to the back. It had to be at least three stories high.

"Wow mommy is this where I am staying today?" Macie asked in bewilderment.

"Yes baby" I smiled at her and got out of the car to get her out.

"Hey!" Alice said bouncing over.

"Hey thank you so much for watching her today" I said unbuckling Macie and letting her climb out. She was not big on letting me carry her.

"Hi, you must be the famous Ms. Macie your mommy has told me so much about" Alice smiled sweetly as she kneeled down.

"Are you a princess?" Macie asked with wide eyes.

"No I am not a princess even though that would be really fun. Why do you ask?"

"Your house looks like a princess would live here!" She smiled at her.

Single Mom

"Thank you sweetie but no I am not a princess. We can play princess if you want to?"

"That would be fun" Macie said pondering the idea.

"Well good. I am Alice come on we will go meet everyone else" She said taking her hand and leading us into the house still holding Macie's hand.

The house was even more beautiful on the inside. It was decorated similar to Edward's apartment. There were toys lying here and there and pictures everywhere. I could hear a little girl singing in the other room. I was suddenly nervous. Edward and I had just decided to see each other very slowly and here I was already meeting his daughter.

Rose and Esme were dancing around the living room with a very pretty little girl. She had long hair the same color as her father. Her eyes were identical. She was defiantly Edwards's daughter. She was very slender and tall. I knew she was four but her size made her look like she was three.

"Oh hey" Rose said slightly winded as she noticed us watching.

"Hey, looks like you guys are having fun" I laughed.

"I am so glad to see you Bella" Esme smiled and came to hug me. I was a little shocked I had just met her the night before.

"You to" I smiled and hugged her back.

"Macie this is Rose and Esme. I do believe that little girl is Emily" I said kneeling down beside my daughter.

"Hi" she smiled happily.

"It is very nice to meet you Macie. Would you like to stay and play with us today?" Esme smiled at her.

Single Mom

"Can I" She asked eagerly.

"Sure can" She smiled back.

"Emily come meet Bella and Macie" Alice said.

She walked over and hid behind Rose's leg.

"Hi" she said shyly.

"Hello I'm Bella and this is Macie" I smiled at her.

"Hi" Macie smiled and waved.

"Emily why don't you show Macie to the playroom?" Esme suggested.

"OK" she beamed and took off.

"Come on Macie follow me!"

"Bye mommy, love you!" She shouted as she was running off to play.

"I love you to be careful and behave" I called after her.

"She will be fine Bella." Alice smiled.

"She is a bit clumsy so if you need me just call"

"We will, I hope you don't mind but I told Carlisle you were coming in and he said to come to his office about noon."

"Oh ok thanks you really didn't have to" I smiled. I had about two hours to kill before I had to be there now. If I didn't get a job at the hospital here I would have to settle on commuting to Port Angeles. I really didn't want to have to do that.

Single Mom

"Why don't we have a cup of tea before you go" Rose suggested.

"Sounds great"

Rose and Esme were headed into the kitchen while Alice and I checked on the girls. They were playing Barbie's.

"Edward will be down in a few" Alice winked as we were on our way into the kitchen.

We were about halfway through our tea when Edward came in smiling. He had a tiara on his head.

"Lovely look for you" I smiled trying not to laugh. I was the first person to see him.

"OH I see Emily has her dress up stuff out" Esme laughed.

"Yes and of course I was the first to get it. But it wasn't Emily's idea this time" He laughed.

"OH so I see you met Macie" I laughed finally.

"Yes, just as beautiful as her mother" he winked making me blush.

"Well I think it is a good look for you Edward. Just wait till I tell Emmet" Rose laughed. The girls were leaving the room. I guessed they wanted to leave us alone.

"Ya go ahead I have no shame" he laughed pulling it off.

"You might want to put that back on before she catches you with it off. Mad Macie isn't someone you want to meet I am sure"

"I think I can handle myself" He laughed.

Single Mom

"That's just what you think now. She will seriously give you a blow to the ego." I smiled.

"Well if I hear her coming I will." He said bending to kiss me soundly.

"And what was that for?" I blushed.

"For good luck and because I wanted to"

"Thank you" I smiled kissing him again.

"Bella, I think you should..." Rose trailed off when she saw us kissing.

"Oh sorry" I mumbled and blushed.

"OH no my bad, just wanted to let you know that it was Eleven thirty" She smiled.

"Oh shit I have to go" I said grabbing my purse and heading for the door. Edward grabbed me and kissed me one more time.

"Good luck, I will see you later"

"Thanks, Tell Macie I will be back soon. She might want to go with me if I go tell her bye now."

"Will do now go" he laughed popping me on the butt as I headed out the door.

I tried to calm my nerves on the way to the hospital by thinking about random things. Nothing I did helped. I pulled into the hospital ten minutes early. Better to be early than late.

I walked up to the front desk to find Doctor Cullen's office.

"HI how can I help you?"

Single Mom

"Yes I am looking for Mr. Cullen. I was supposed to meet him in his office at noon."

"You must be Ms. Swan."

"Yes" I smiled.

"Second hall third door on the right" she smiled.

"Thank you" I smiled and headed off to his office.

I found it quite easily, and knocked on the door.

"Come in"

"Hello Doctor Cullen"

"Hello you must be the famous Bella Swan, you look familiar to me" He smiled and shook my hand.

"That would be me. You have treated my daughter several times"

"Yes I remember, Macie right"

"Yes sir" I smiled.

"Yes, she is a very sweet girl. I am sure her and Emily are getting along fine"

"I hope so, when I left she had already forced Edward into a tiara" I laughed

"Well at least she and Emily have that in common. She does it to him all the time" he said laughing.

"She seems very sweet Dr. Cullen" I smiled.

Single Mom

"Thank you, please call me Carlisle. Now let's get down to business I am sure you would like to make it back in time for the tea party" he smiled.

"Oh yes" I smiled.

I hope you like it. Ch 9 will be up soon. Any ideas for the story let me know I love to hear from you all. I love all my readers:) Please review and let me know what you think.

Thanks

Amy Bee

Chapter 9

Hey everyone sorry the last chapter wasn't the best. But I hope this makes up for it. Things are starting to get a little more dramatic again. You will see Bella and Edward are not going to have an easy slow relationship. They have a lot of interference. Now the last chapter didn't get hardly any reviews! I know it wasn't the best but I would still like to hear what u think. Reviews make me happy and want to write this story faster so i can get it up for you guys.

Disclaimer: I don't own twilight

Single Mom

Ch.9

Job and news

I had filled out my application and had an interview. I had even taken a drug test. Carlisle had said I was pretty much a dead giveaway for the job. I just had to wait to hear the answer.

I had been gone about three hours and I just got to the Cullen's and had been greeted by Edward. He had just kissed me hello when Macie and Emily rounded the corner, running full speed towards us.

"Macie sl..." I didn't even get to finish my sentence. She tripped over her feet and hit the back of her head on the edge of the iron hall table leg. I could not reach her in time.

"Oh My god baby are you OK" that was when I saw the blood.

"It hurts mommy" she said bluntly, no tears. She was always very brave when it came to pain.

Single Mom

"Mom get dad on the phone and tell him we are coming in. Alice I need towels now" Edward ordered picking her up and heading outside with her. I was scrambling to keep up. Alice came running with the towels. Edward quickly placed one over the head wound.

"Bella can you drive?" he said calmly.

"Yes"

"Get my keys out of my pocket. Rose please calm Emily down" he ordered. Alice helped Edward get in the car with Macie and I started too climbed into the driver's seat.

"Bella maybe you should let me drive" Alice said stopping me.

"Why we have to go did you see all that blood?"

"Bella you are shaking, you need to let me drive."

It finally registered how bad I was shaking. I climbed in the back seat with Edward and Macie and we were off to the hospital.

"Mommy it stings." She said with tear filled eyes.

"I know baby but we are going to get you all fixed up." I said trying to reassure her and myself. I felt tears spring up in my eyes and I tried to push them back before she could see.

"You will be just fine; Carlisle will get you fixed up in no time." Edward smiled at us both. She was still lying in his lap with his hand applying pressure.

We pulled up to the emergency entrance quicker than I expected.

"Go I will park the car and see you inside. Rose, Esme and Emily will be here soon."

Single Mom

We walked in the door to find Carlisle waiting on us.

"What happened?" he said leading us back to an exam room.

"I did it again" She said angrily.

"I can see I was hoping I would actually get to see you outside the hospital today" he smiled.

"They were running through the house. I had just walked in the door and she tripped over her feet and hit her head on the hall table."

"I had just walked in the door before Bella so they were running to meet us at the door" Edward said placing her on the gurney.

"Well my clumsy girl let's see what you have done here" Carlisle smiled at her and taking the towel off to examine her head.

"Well she has a nice laceration. We will need to just close this up. I would prefer to use staples since she is so little and I know her history. I am also going to get a cat scan just to be safe but she seems fine."

"Thank you so much Carlisle." I said gratefully.

"No problem be right back to get this closed up" he smiled and took Macie for her cat scan after I kissed her cheek.

Edward and I were alone now and I felt the tears welling up again.

"Thank you Edward"

"For what" he asked.

"For thinking so quickly and getting us here, I was scared to death"

"No problem it was really just instinct, no need to thank me"

Single Mom

"I just wanted to" I said kissing him on the cheek.

"I can handle that" he laughed.

We sat quietly waiting on Macie and Carlisle to come back.

"Well it looks like she has a mild concussion" he said coming back in and setting her down.

"Oh"

"She will be fine I would like to keep an eye on her for the next few hours though. Do you mind staying at the house for a little while?"

"That's fine just as long as she is taken care of I will do anything"

"I know, why don't you and Edward go tell everyone how she is doing. I believe she has quite the crowd out there. I will get her fixed up and we will come on out."

"Are you sure I don't want to leave her"

"Dad will take good care of her Bella. Besides the way you are right now will probably scare her"

"Mommy I am a big girl, and I get a Popsicle when I am done!" She smiled.

"OK sweetie but only if you are sure" I said rubbing her leg.

"OK mommy"

"I will be right outside if you want me"

"OK mommy" she smiled again.

Single Mom

I kissed her one more time and Edward led me out of the room. I was not very good with needles so I knew it was better if I left the room.

I was a little shocked when we entered the waiting room. Charlie was there with Esme, Rose, Alice, Emily, Emmet, Jasper, Angela and Ben. Emily came running up to Edward and threw herself at him.

"Daddy!"

"Hey Sweetie" he said picking her up and kissing her forehead.

"Is Macie OK?" she said a little teary eyed. I could tell she had been crying.

"Yes she is, she has a bump on the head like you had, and Paw Paw Carlisle is fixing it."

"OK can she still play?"

"How about you two color for a little while?" I suggested.

"OK!"

"So what is going on" Charlie asked. I could tell he had been worrying. He had that tight line going across his forehead.

"Carlisle says she has a mild concussion and needs stitches. He is going to use staples to keep her from busting it open again."

"What did she do this time?" Angela asked.

"She and Emily came running to the door and Macie tripped over her feet and hit the Hall table leg."

"So, a classic Macie?" Ben said.

Single Mom

"Yap, Carlisle wants us to hang around your house Esme. He wants to watch her for a few hours to make sure the concussion doesn't give any problems."

"That's just fine, Charlie I hope you are coming to. I will cook us all dinner." She smiled.

"I actually have to cover another shift, one of the officers called in sick. Thank you for the offer though."

"Well we will just have to have you over another night then"

"Well as long as Macie is good we are going to get going, we have to go to Ben's parents" Angela said giving me a hug.

"Ya she is fine. Make sure to tell them hi for us. I will call you later."

"Will do" She smiled before her and Ben left.

"Well I have to get back to work now that I know she is OK. Give her a kiss for me and I will call you later. I will have to work all night probably." Charlie told me.

"OK dad, thanks for coming. I have my cell with me"

"See ya later Bell's"

Carlisle came out with Macie right after Charlie left.

"Mommy!"

"Moo Moo" I laughed picking her up and kissing her cheek.

"Carlisle said I was a good girl! He promised Emily and me a popsicle!" She was very happy about that.

"Really Paw Paw!" Emily beamed at him.

Single Mom

"I sure did why don't you ask Bella and Daddy If I can drive you girls home and we will stop and get Ice cream!"

"Can We Ms. Bella? Daddy Please!" Emily Begged

"Mommy Pretty Please!" Macie added with her pouty face.

"Fine with me" Edward shrugged.

"I guess but you have to promise no more running"

"Ok mommy I promise, I be careful"

"YA" they both squealed happily.

"What about booster seats?" I asked.

"I have one in my car and there is one in the Volvo" Carlisle smiled.

"OK fine you win" I laughed.

We got the girls situated in Carlisle car and all left the hospital. Alice decided to ride back with Esme since Rose was riding with the guys.

"They are determined to push us together aren't they?" I said as we were pulling out of the hospital.

"I think it is safe to say they are more than determined" he laughed.

"No way to stop them either?"

"I don't believe so, are you against the idea?" He said looking a little put out.

"Oh no, I just don't want them to push us into something quicker than we want, or something that we don't want. Are you against it?" I should have asked the last part before I said I wasn't. Oh well too late to take it back now.

Single Mom

"Not at all, if I was I wouldn't have asked you to dinner or kissed you" he winked making me smile and blush. He was so different from anyone I had ever dated. The rest of the ride was quiet giving me time to think.

The last relationship I was in ended up horrible. I hadn't lied to Edward about it. I was more attached to the guy than I let on that I was. It hurt me pretty bad when I found out. Kate and I had gone through the PTA program together from start to finish. I had met Garret the semester before our last. Things were wonderful between us. We had even talked about long term. That was before I had introduced Kate to him. The day after my birthday he broke it off. Angela had told me she saw Garret and Kate texting at the party they threw for me. I immediately knew what had happened. They were officially together the week after our breakup. So our last semester was miserable. Kate and I had avoided each other the entire time. Graduation was just as bad. Garret was there of course to cheer her on. I had even heard they were engaged now.

"Penny for your thoughts" Edward said as we were pulling into his driveway.

"Was just thinking about my last relationship and my last semesters of college." I shrugged.

"Ah, I know what you mean. I was thinking about mine earlier while I was out."

"I wonder if yours is as bad as mine" I laughed.

"I have no clue, want to talk about it"

"Are you sure you would want to hear it?"

"Sure I will even tell you mine. I mean since everyone is dying to have us together and we are dating now shouldn't we know more about each other?"

"Good point" I laughed.

We got out and sat on the porch swing.

Single Mom

"So who goes first?" I said.

"You can if you want."

"Well I met this guy the semester before my last one. I had introduced him to my friends on our break before we started the last semester. We were pretty serious and talked about long term. Well they threw a party for me the weekend of my birthday He had arranged most of it. He had even invited my friend from school I had introduced to him. We had all been out together a few times so I didn't think much of it, until the day after my birthday when we called it off. Angela told me she had seen them texting each other the night of the party. They were in the same room so it made her uneasy. They were official the week after and it made our last semester very occurred to say the least. Even Graduation was weird. I heard about a month or so ago that they got engaged." I had actually gotten over the deal about a month after. It still hurt that I had lost a friend but I was fine with that.

"That is messed up" he laughed.

"So what about you?"

"Well Jane and I had met while I was helping the music teacher at the high school. We were seeing each other for a few months; I am not one for random dating or one night stands. Found out right after I introduced her to Emily that she was not at all who she said she was. She never wanted to do anything that involved Emily and was totally fake. She started seeing someone else in the middle of it. I think they are together still but who knows." He laughed.

"Sounds like we are about even on that then" I laughed.

"Ya" he laughed.

His phone started to ring and he looked to see who it was.

"Shit, I need to take this I will be right back" he said answering the phone and walking around the corner of the porch. Carlisle and the girls pulled up as he

Single Mom

walked around the corner.

"Hey!" the girls said climbing out of the car as Carlisle opened the door for them. They both had chocolate on their face.

"Well hey, don't you to look completely nasty" I laughed.

"It was good" Macie smiled.

"Did you think him?" I glared.

"Yes! Can we go color now?"

"After I get a hug and kiss!" She did as I asked and went inside with Emily to color.

"She sure is sweet Bella" Carlisle said coming up the porch with his briefcase.

"Thanks Carlisle how is she?"

"She seems fine, let's just keep an eye on her for the next couple of hours."

"Oh hey dad didn't know you were home. Where are the girls" Edward said coming around the corner.

"Just got here, they are inside coloring, See you two inside in a few" he said making his way in the door.

"Are you ok?" I asked Edward. He wasn't smiling like he was earlier. He sat back down and held my hand.

"Ya, just Tonya's sister is on her way to see Emily. She comes by when she can. Emily hasn't seen her since her graduation about three months ago. She has been busy. She is also a PTA. You two probably went to school together."

Single Mom

Just as he was finishing up a land rover pulling up. I recognized the vehicle instantly. It was Garrets. Great! I hadn't had the information or time to put it together.

"Bella are you OK?" Edward asked. I must have had a strange look n my face.

"Remember that friend from college I was just telling you about?"

"No way!"

"Yes way" I looked at him and nodded. His expression was shocked.

"I am so sorry Bella I didn't know. I would have made her wait to see Emily till some other time"

"Its fine how could you know, I mean I don't remember saying any names to you about it." I said.

"Well let's lay it on thick for her shall we" he smiled at me.

"I am really fine with the whole thing I promise"

"Ya well still won't they have fun seeing us all blissful together" he laughed.

Kate and Garret got out of the car and started walking up the porch hand and hand. They hadn't realized who I was yet. My truck was parked by the garage. So they had no warning.

"Hey" Edward said as they started up the porch. That drew there attention.

"UM Hey" Kate said.

"Hi Kate, Garret" I smiled sweetly as Edward tightened his grip on my hand a little more.

Single Mom

"Hi Bella" Garret said trying to avoid looking me in the eyes. We had run into each other here and there once or twice since the break up but no more than just a pass in the mall or someplace.

"I will just go check on the girls and tell Emily you are here" I smiled and kissed Edwards cheek and went inside. Alice was standing in the doorway of the playroom with Jasper watching the girls color.

"Hey" She smiled at me. I tried to smile back sweetly but I guess it came out smug.

"What's wrong" She said immediately picking up on my mood.

"Kate and Garret are here to see Emily" I said.

"Well what's wrong with that?" Jasper said.

"Garret is my ex; Kate was a friend who he was talking to behind my back"

"OH Shit" Alice mumbled.

"It's fine was just a shock to see them, Edward wants' to rub it in that we are seeing each other" I laughed.

"Sounds good to me, she is snooty" Alice laughed.

"Ya I came to tell Emily they are here"

"Well me and Jasper will go out with you to keep you company."

Carlisle had sat Macie up in Emily's room. She had twin beds for when she had sleep over's. She was wearing some of Emily's pajamas and was coloring in the middle of the bed with Emily.

"Hey Emily, your aunt Kate is here." She immediately went running out the door. I heard Alice tell her to slow down. "Macie do you want to come outside with mommy?"

Single Mom

"Ya" I could tell she was sleepy so I picked her up and placed her on my hip.

"Now Garret is with Kate, so just remember mommy and Edward are together now." I decided to tell her before she got confused. Then it hit me.

Edward and I were dating. With that realization I felt a large smile come to my face.

"Bella she is probably going to fall asleep here soon, she had a small dose of pain medicine when I stapled her head. It will wear off soon and I know she will be hurting. So just let her sleep and in a few hours I will give her another dose" Carlisle said as we went to pass by the living room.

"Sounds good. She will probably fall asleep with me swinging her" I smiled and went back outside. Emily was sitting on the other swing with Kate and Emily. Jasper and Alice were on the steps talking to Edward. I joined Edward on the swing.

"Hi Macie" Garret smiled at her.

"Hi Garret" she said plainly. She was defiantly sleepy. I had no clue how she stayed awake as long as she had.

"What's wrong with her?" he said. He was an EMT and was very familiar with my clumsy daughter.

"She busted her head open earlier and Carlisle had to staple it. Plus the pain medicine is starting to wear her down."

"Oh OK, is she going to be alright"

"Yes she has a mild concussion so Carlisle is going to observe her here for a few more hours." Edward said putting his arm around me. I was defiantly in trouble. I was feeling more for Edward than I wanted to and I wanted to be with him.

Single Mom

Garret just nodded and went back to listening to Emily.

Edward had been pushing the swing lightly for about five minutes when Jasper spoke up.

"Bella she is out like a light, can I take her in for you?"

"Thank you Jasper, she is a bit heavy" I kissed her forehead before Jasper took her inside and laid her down.

Kate had brought Emily a new Barbie and she was playing with it.

"I'm going to go show grandma, I'll be back" she said running in the house leaving us with the occurred moment.

"Anyone want any lemonade?" Alice smiled.

"Sure" we all chorused together. She headed in the house to gather the lemonade. I bet she would take her time to keep from being with us all.

"So how have you been Edward" Kate smiled at him. She had avoided speaking to me as much as possible.

"Just fine, even better now days" he smiled and kissed me. He was defiantly rubbing it in and I couldn't help but blush.

"That's good to hear" she smiled. I could tell she was faking.

"What about you Bella?" Garret added looking down.

"Great actually, I am wait to hear about a job and as you can tell I am seeing someone" I smiled sweetly. I really didn't hate him. I could actually care less. "I heard you two were engaged" I added.

"Yes, but we don't know where we will live yet." Kate said.

Single Mom

"Have you not gotten a job yet?"

"Not yet, have looked in Port Angeles and Seattle, not sure yet. We can't decide if we want to live close to our families or in Port Angeles." She said a little nervous to be talking about it with me.

"I'm guessing that includes my ex wife?" Edward asked.

"Yes, she moved back to Seattle. I figured you would have know that, haven't you talked to her?"

"No, not a word, last I knew she was traveling with Marcus. It took forever to get the divorce papers to her but they are signed finally and will be final in three weeks. She hasn't even called Emily or sent her a card."

"Well it's probably better that way"

"What do you mean?" he asked confused.

"She doesn't need to be around Emily."

"She chose not to have her around not me" I could hear the anger in his voice.

"No Edward, She loves Emily but she has a few problems."

"She is the one that got involved with another man, not me."

"I guess I should tell you"

"Tell me what?" he was almost livid I felt him tense up.

"She is living with our parents again. We hadn't heard from her in a few weeks so we looked into it. The last place her credit cards were used was Greece. So Garret and I went looking for her. When we found her in Greece she was beat up pretty bad that was right after graduation. That is why I haven't been to see Emily I have had my hands full. She got out of the hospital about a week after

Single Mom

being there and two weeks later tried to kill herself. She came home and tried to OD so we admitted her to a mental institution. She just got out about two weeks ago. She has had a lot of therapy. They can't find Marcus anywhere. She realized how bad she messed up her life in Greece and tried to leave him. He beat her and left her for dead. She was a mess. But finally seems to be getting better"

"Sorry to hear that. But I can't forgive her for what she has done to Emily."

"I don't expect you to neither does she. But I won't be surprised if she calls you soon."

"We will see" Edward said wrapping his arm around me.

"Kate I have to be at work in two hours" Garret said.

"OK just let me go tell Emily goodbye." She went inside to tell Emily goodbye.

"Bella it is good to see you and I am glad to see you are happy" Garret said.

"You two, good luck" I said walking inside to check on Macie. Edward followed me and told Kate goodbye as she passed.

Macie was still sound asleep and Emily was playing Barbie's with Alice.

"Well that is going to be hell" Edward muttered sitting down on the couch.

"What?" I asked.

"The last think Emily needs is Tonya back in her life. She just got over her not being here."

"She will be fine, trust me James is in and out of Macie's life, not for long but he has been. It will work out.

"Maybe she won't call" he said leaning his head on my shoulder.

Single Mom

"Hey you two I was hoping they were gone. I need to tell Bella something" Carlisle said coming into the room followed by everyone else.

"Is everything ok with Macie?" I asked suddenly fearing that her concussion was much worse.

"Yes she is fine, this is about the job" Carlisle smiled and sat down on the love seat with Esme.

"Oh OK, what about it"

"You got the job! You start next week!"

"Really?" I asked shocked.

"Yap, they were really pleased with you and are really excited to be working with you"

"That's great! Thank you so much" I squealed.

Pretty pretty please review! I beg you lol Lets gt the review numbers up for this story. Their are a lot of readers. I love u guys. Thanks for Reviewing, alerting, and favroiting me and the story!

Thanks Amy Bee

~*V Click review V*~

Chapter 10

Important Note to my readers

Hey everyone. I am sorry I haven't updated in a few days. I am sorry to say it will be a few more days. My aunt passed away today. I am not in the mood to write or do I have time right now. I felt like I owed you an explanation. So don't give up on the story I will be back soon. Ch 10 is almost finished. But I can't finish it right now. It is a happy chapter and I am far from happy. It is the calm before the drama there will probably be one calmer chapter before the rest kicks in. Don't review this because you will not be able to review ch 10 when I post it. But thank you for being patient. I will have it up when I can right again. Probably next week after the funeral and everything.

Amy Bee

Chapter 11

Ok I am back. I had to get back to writing because I needed the normality. Now before you read. This chapter shows how Bella and Edward are around each other a week later. It is also an introduction to the more dramatic parts that are coming up. Ch. 11 may start with a lemon and since i left you with out an update there is also a suprise for you in POV's I will be adding another POV which i think will be very important to the story. I really appreciate you guys understanding and your prayers. I ask that you continue because my it is far from over for us. She has two children that she adopted and her and my other aunt lived together and raised these children. We have custody issues to work out with their real parents and we are still grieving the loss o such a wonderful and amazing woman who lost her life tragically at the young age of 47. I will be posting a story summery on my profile soon and also a poll. more details at the bottom.

Disclaimer: I don't own twilight.

Single Mom

Ch.10

Roses and Court

"Come on Macie! Mommy can't be late; we have to get you to Aunt Jessica." I called up the stairs.

"Coming mommy!" She beamed at me from the top of the stairs. She had spent the past five minutes looking for her "Puppy Logs". The stuffed animals have taken their share of beatings in three short years. They went everywhere with her.

She finally made it to the bottom of the stairs and we were on our way. She had upheld her promise to be careful. A week had passed since she had her

Single Mom

accident. Her staples were coming out this evening.

We made it to Jessica's five minutes later.

"Thank you so much for watching her for me. She starts daycare next week." I said getting Macie and her things out of the car.

"Bella you know I don't mind. Besides after this week I will be planning the wedding and I won't have very much time. So I am glad I get to spend some time with her. We may even go looking at dresses this week." She smiled taking Macie's things.

"She will love that. She is really excited about being the flower girl" I laughed. We had already received our positions for the wedding. I was the maid of honor and Macie was the flower girl.

"Good, Me to Moo Moo." She said taking Macie's hand. I bent down and kissed her cheek.

"Now be a good girl sweetie and I will be back when I get off work. Remember we are going to see Carlisle this afternoon to get your staples out."

"OK mommy, you be good for me to and have a good day! Love you" She smiled.

"I love you to sweetie. See you guy's soon."

With that I was on my way to my new job. Today was my first day and I was excited. I loved what I did. All the years I had been so clumsy had made me choose to be a Physical Therapist Assistant.

Since the clinic was in the hospital we were to wear scrubs, no specific color. I had received several pairs as gifts the past week from Charlie, Alice, Renee, and Angela.

Single Mom

I made it through the morning sessions perfectly. My patients were all determined and nice. Angela had gotten the job also and was now working with Carlisle. We also had our lunches at the same time.

"Hey Ang!" I smiled as I walked in.

"Hey! So how do you like it so far?" She smiled back.

"I love it" I bounced. Alice must be rubbing off on me.

We laughed and talked about our mutual patients as we grabbed our lunch and made our way to a table.

"So how are things with you and Edward?"

"Things are great; we are taking it slow and just enjoying each other's company."

"Oh come on you two have been together most of the week. Dinner, taking the girls for ice cream and the park, and the movies" she wiggled her eyebrows.

"Look we are really just getting to know each other. We both have a bad track record and kids. I mean we are nothing serious. I guess you could say we are just hanging out and dating, nothing major. But just to satisfy your need for juicy details, yes I like him, a lot, and everything is amazing" I laughed.

"I knew it! You two slept together!" She giggled.

"Shh I don't want everyone here to know, geez! Besides there's Carlisle now" I pointed to the entrance. He spotted us and walked over with a smile.

"Hello ladies, anything good on the menu today?"

"Hello Carlisle" I smiled "The grilled chicken salad's good" I said taking another bite.

Single Mom

"Look's good to, how's your first day going?"

"Great! I really love it so far"

"Glad to hear, I am starved and have a conference call in five minutes so I am going to grab something and head back to my office. See you later Bella. Angela enjoy lunch and I will meet up with you on the third floor" he smiled.

"Sure thing" She smiled as he turned to leave offering us a wave.

"How is it working for him" I whispered.

"It's great actually. He is really nice to work for. Nothing like when I had rotation in Port Angeles with all the snobby doctors" she laughed.

"I bet" I laughed.

We finished our lunch and parted ways. When I got back to the floor our secretary Lauren was all smiles.

"Hey Lauren did someone send you flowers?" I smiled seeing a beautiful bouquet of Gerber Daisies.

"Nope actually they are for you" she smiled.

"Me, really?" I was shocked who would send me flowers. Daisies were my favorite so it had to be someone who knew.

"Yes you, read the card" She smiled plucking the card from the flowers and handing it over. I had gone to school with Lauren before I left Forks, so I was accustomed to her bouncy cheerleader attitude.

"Thanks" I said opening the card and sitting in the extra chair behind the desk.

Dear Bella,

Single Mom

I hope you are having a wonderful day. Can't wait to see you again. Dinner tonight?

Edward

"So who are they from?" She asked bouncing in her seat.

"Edward, it's so sweet!" I giggled.

She took the card and read it.

"Aw, that is so sweet! Edward who?" She asked handing me back the card with a curious smile.

"Cullen" I smiled happily.

"Well girl you have lucked out, he is a catch." She laughed and went back to filling her paper work. I looked over the schedule and took the flowers back to the gym with me. We were booked up for the rest of the day.

Angela had brought a patient down to set up sessions and had slipped back to see me. She gushed over the flowers and told me I better let him know about dinner. I decided I would send him a quick text between patients and let him know. I definitely wanted to see him now.

" Thank you, I love them, and yes. After the staples come out."

He responded immediately.

Great, see you at my house :D

The rest of the afternoon went by pretty quickly. I picked Macie up and we went to get ready.

I was just slipping into my outfit when my phone rang.

Single Mom

"Hello" I answered trying not to fall.

"Hey Bella, you got a second?" Erin asked.

"Sure what's up?"

"I have some good news!"

"Really what's that?" I asked very curious.

"We have a court date" she said excitedly.

"Really when!" My day was getting better and better.

"Two weeks from now"

"That soon?" I didn't expect it to be this soon.

"Yap, I will let you know more later I am on my way to meet Eric for dinner"

"OK thanks talk to you later"

I finished getting dressed and grabbed Macie another pair of cloths. Carlisle was taking her staples out at home so I grabbed a change of clothes and pj's just in case. Charlie was no were to be found so I left him a note and we headed over to the Cullen's.

Esme was outside planting flowers when we pulled up.

"Hey Esme!" Macie said bouncing over to her.

"Hey sweetie!" she said hugging her.

"Hey, what are you doing home; I thought you would be at the restaurant."

Single Mom

"Oh no, I have only been helping out. Now that he is here and running it, I get to take it easy and focus on my real job. Besides he finally hired some great managers so we do not have to be there all the time."

"That's great, what is your real job anyway?"

"I am an interior designer, and of course I love to be a housewife." she smiled.

"That's great"

"Thanks, why don't you two go on inside Carlisle is upstairs waiting for Macie. I have a surprise for you Macie when you are finished" she smiled and went back to her gardening. Macie was bouncing ready to know what her surprise was as I led her in the house.

"Calm down sweetie you will get it I promise" I laughed.

"Ok mommy, come on let's get these out so I can see what it is!" She said pulling me towards the stairs.

"Honey I am not sure where his study is" I laughed. I had never seen a kid this excited to get staples out.

"I do" She laughed and pulled on me some more. I followed her up the stairs to an open door.

"Hi Carlisle!" She said bouncing into his office and over to his desk.

"Well hello ladies" he smiled, Macie giggled at his greeting.

"Hey, I think she is excited. Esme told her she had a surprise for her" I laughed.

"Well I guess we better take advantage of it then" he laughed "I will be right back I have to go wash up"

Single Mom

A few minutes later he was back and we were all sitting on the couch in his office.

"Macie this isn't going to hurt. It might pull a little but you shouldn't really feel any pain."

"Ok can I watch?" She had been asking me all about it.

"It is going to be kind of hard for you to watch sweetie but I will show them to you, will that work?"

"Yap" she smiled.

He plucked the stapled from her now healed head and showed her each and every one. She never cried once.

"All done" he said giving her a hug "I will see you downstairs in a few" He smiled.

"Thanks" I smiled as I followed Macie down the stairs. Esme was waiting at the end of the stairs.

"I didn't hear any crying at all! You must have been super good" She said scooping her up.

"I was can I have my surprise now?" she smiled.

"You sure can, it's in the kitchen" she laughed and set Macie down. She headed towards the kitchen in a run.

"Slow down young lady!" I laughed.

"Come on I made some hot coco." Esme laughed and lead me into the kitchen. Edward, Emily, and Macie were at the table.

Single Mom

"Hey I didn't know you were here yet" I said with a smile. Just seeing him made me smile. He was going to get me in trouble with my emotions.

"Hey, we just got here" he said coming over to me and kissing me softly, making Macie and Emily giggle.

"I think we have some nosy girls" I laughed.

"No worries, I plan on taking care of that" Esme laughed and placed a piece of chocolate cake with sprinkles in front of them.

"Thank you!" they squealed.

"You're welcome but this is just the start so you two better not fill up on cake" she laughed.

"You are spoiling her" I laughed. They both had chocolate on their faces.

"I wouldn't start that argument, she will win" Edward said pulling me out of the kitchen.

"Hey now I wanted cake to" I protested as he pulled me into the hallway.

"You can have your cake in a minute" he laughed as he pulled me close and backed me to the wall. "But first I want to do this without any giggles" He said as he crashed his lips to mine.

He ran his tongue over my bottom lip sending shivers down my spine. I opened up and let him in. He tasted of mint and coco.

I got wrapped up in the moment and before I realized what I was doing my hands were snaking up his chest and into his hair.

I was pulled out of the moment by a giggle and someone clearing their throat. We quickly broke apart to see Jasper and Alice.

Single Mom

"Sorry to interrupt brother in law but I want cake" Jasper laughed and headed for the kitchen. Alice just giggled and followed.

"Well we got giggled at after all" I laughed.

"Ya so I think we need to go back in there. Esme is ready to tell the girls the second half of their surprise" He laughed.

"Ya, I'm kind of curious to, plus I want my cake" I laughed and went back in.

We were all sitting around sipping on coco when Esme decided it was time for their surprise.

"Ok girls I think you two should go upstairs. In Emily's room Alice has got you two outfits, put them on and come back downstairs." She smiled. The girls smiled and took off.

"Cloths are the surprise? Alice you shouldn't have!" I said.

"Oh get over it, besides that's not the surprise." She smiled.

"Then what is?"

"You will find out when they do" Edward laughed.

"Well it is almost six and I believe someone asked me to dinner tonight. Plus my kid has a bedtime." I laughed at him. Esme insisted on us only having a small piece of cake so I was still pretty hungry.

"That I did, just wait and see what happens next" he laughed. I just stuck my tongue out and started chatting with Alice.

"Bella can I keep Macie tomorrow?" Esme interrupted.

"Well I guess I would have to call Jessica." I said a little confused.

Single Mom

"Great! Girls hurry up; we are going to be late"

The girls came down a few moments later. They were all dressed up. Emily was dressed as Cinderella and Macie was dressed up as Jasmine.

"Well don't you two look pretty" Edward said.

"Thank you" they giggled.

"Ok I give what is going on?" I said.

"Well since you two have dinner plans the girls and I are going to see Disney on Ice Princess Classics. They get to go as their favorite princess." Esme giggled.

"Really!" Macie said excited and shocked.

"Really!" Alice confirmed.

"Now Bella, I am afraid I have to steal you away for a few" Alice said with an evil smile.

"What are you up to crazy pixie?" I glared trying to keep a straight face.

"Just for that you have to wait and see, now get moving we are going upstairs" she ordered.

Edward and Jasper laughed while Esme and the girls followed us upstairs.

"Is mommy going to be a princess to?" Macie asked.

"We will just have to wait and see." Alice laughed.

We walked into a very pink bedroom. It had to have been Alice's at some point. There was another garment bag, just like the one from before, lying across the bed.

Single Mom

"So you are playing Bella Barbie again?"

"Oh Bella you will look great!" She bounced.

"I'm sure, I will also be tortured in the process" I laughed.

"Beauty is pain" she smiled happily.

Thirty minutes later I was ready.

"Oh Bella you look pretty!" Emily gushed.

"Thank you sweetie" I smiled. Alice had forbidden me to see what I looked like until she was finished. I was wearing a dark grey strapless dress. It had a sweetheart neckline, natural waist, bubble skirt and black taping on the bodice. She had put me in a pair of black strappy heels that crisscrossed across the top and wrapped around my ankle. My hair was left down and my makeup was light with dark grey eye shadow. I loved it, but had no idea where we were going or what Edward was up to. No one would tell me anything. All they would say was that Edward would have to tell me. I was waiting in her room for her to tell me I could come down. Apparently I was waiting on something before I was to be seen.

"Ok Bella come down" Alice called from the stairs.

I didn't know what the fuss was over considering Edward and I had been to dinner several times in the past week. But I wanted to keep Alice happy so I did as I was told and headed down the stairs. Edward was leaned against the piano wearing a black dress shirt with grey pin stripes and a pair of dark jeans that fit perfectly. The top buttons were left undone to revile a grey t shirt underneath. He looked hot!

"Wow mommy" Macie said pulling everyone's attention to me.

"Bella you look stunning" Edward said walking over and kissing my cheek.

Single Mom

"Amazing Bella... Come on girls we have to get going." Esme said smiling at me.

We said our goodbyes and got in our separate vehicles.

"So where are we going?" I finally asked as we headed out of the drive way.

"Castaway's, it's a nice restaurant and night club."

"You know I have to work tomorrow right?" I laughed at the idea of showing up at work the next day late with leftover makeup.

"Yes I do But I still thought It would be fun for a few hours, since most of our dates have been with the girls" he laughed.

"True" I agreed. The past week we were all together practically every afternoon. The girls loved playing with each other.

"Besides we haven't actually got to celebrate you getting the job. I am glad you got it since you said you would probably have to move to find one." He smiled. I knew him admitting something like this was pretty big for us.

"Ya I am glad to. I don't want Macie growing up in the city." I offered to try and curb the conversation. It was the truth after all. I just wasn't sure I really wanted to admit how strong my feelings towards Edward were already growing. Thankfully the rest of the ride was comfortably silent. I had court to get ready for and a new job. Was I really ready to be in a serious relationship? Was he really ready? I wasn't sure about the answers to my thoughts but I knew I had to figure them out soon because it wasn't just us involved, our daughters were. No one needed to get hurt.

We made small talk throughout dinner and enjoyed the delicious meal. We had even had a few drinks and listened to the band. It was about nine thirty when we had decided to leave. Our conversations were about everything but us. I was grateful in a way, but it also made me see that he was probably thinking the same thing I was. We were in the car on our way back when I decided to bring

Single Mom

up court.

"Edward, I will probably be very busy over the next week or two."

"Really"

"Ya, I got a call from Erin before I came over tonight. We have court two weeks from today. Erin and I will probably be meeting after work a lot to go over everything."

"That's great; I didn't expect her to get that done so quick."

"Me either but I am ready for it. The quicker it starts the quicker it will be over."

He reached over and held my hand. I was content with this. I wanted to let myself have something with Edward. The truth was I was just too scared. I had always been the strong one when it came to things like this. Garret was the last straw. I was wounded and scared to let myself get hurt again.

"I also have some news" he said pulling me from my thoughts.

"Oh really?"

"Ya Tonya called"

"Oh, how did that go?" I knew he dreaded that as much as I had dreaded being near James.

"Fine actually, she apologized for a lot of things. It doesn't change anything but it was a start for her I guess. I am not sure what is going on there but it worries me. I am not sure she is clean. She is being way to nice for her not to be up to something."

"I'm sorry Edward. We just have screwed up ex's don't we?" I laughed.

Single Mom

"That is probably understating it" he laughed.

"True but hey at least were not giving them more credit to live up to"

"I see the logic. Maybe that is why everyone thinks we should be together" he laughed again.

"Great logic" I laughed. It wasn't a fake laughed, but genuine. I had not thought of it that way. And now that I looked at the big picture it made perfect sense, at least to the outsiders. Maybe it didn't to us yet but we would be forced to see it by our family and friends at some point. He squeezed my hand a little tighter in our laughter as we pulled up to his house.

"Do you want to stay over? The girls will probably be back a little later and I know Macie will probably want to see you in the morning before you leave" he smiled.

"That would be nice but I don't have any scrubs with me. Plus how would it look to the girls and your parents if we stayed in your room and they came in" I laughed.

"I never said we would stay in the main house, plus there are scrubs here" he winked.

"Where would we stay then?"

"Come on I will show you" he said when he came around to open my door.

"Ok" I laughed.

"Are your feet hurting?" he asked when he saw me walking a little funny.

"Ya I have been on my feet all day remember, then that crazy pixie you call a sister put me in these" I laughed.

Single Mom

"Ya sorry her hop on" he laughed and squatted down for me to climb on his back.

"I can walk" I laughed.

"Just get on, it will be fun"

"Fine, but remember I am wearing a dress" I said still laughing and climbed on his back. We were acting like teenagers and it felt great. It was like we brought out each other's inner child.

He took off around the other side of the garage. I had no Idea where we were going but it was obviously not right next door to the main house. We laughed and joked the whole way. We were on a little path that was lit by little garden lights. You could tell even in the dark that Esme had put a lot of work into this area. I finally saw where we were going. It was a small cottage. Like a guest house. It was beautiful.

"Where are we?" I asked.

"My house" he laughed.

"I thought you lived with them"

"We have been staying there. This was the guest house originally but Esme remodeled and gave it to me. She just finished it a few days ago" he said as he put me down to dig for his keys.

"It's beautiful" is all I could say.

"Thank you; wait till you see the inside. We haven't actually stayed here yet because Emily's bedroom set is not finished." He said opening the door.

It was very cozy. A ceiling to floor bookshelf covered one wall. The furniture was all over sized and fluffy. It was the perfect place to hide away on a rainy day. He showed me through the house. There were three bedrooms and two

Single Mom

baths. Apparently she had added on as well. I finally realized that his family was very wealthy. Esme had turned a simple guest house in to a beautiful home.

He finished showing me the master suite. It was white with dark blue accents. The bed was huge with a white down comforter and dark blue pillows. You could probably sleep away a week in here and never want to leave.

After I had gotten the grand tour, which apparently ended in the master suite, his room, he came over to me. He picked me up and set me on the foot of the bed, making me laugh.

"Now I believe you want to get out of those shoes" he said smiling at me.

"You read my mind" I smiled back. This was going to be a great night. No matter how I felt about where we were going to take this, I knew I couldn't fight what I felt. I also knew was slowly realizing I didn't want to fight it or over think it. I liked what we had and if it got more serious, well I would just take it as it came.

I hope you enjoyed this chapter. I made it a little longer since I took so long on updating. Thank you again for your support during my family's time of need. Now about the summery and poll. I will hopefully have them up later today. Chapter 11 is a priority. I am going to the doctor today to see If I have the H1N1 Flu. I was exposed over the weekend, my cousin has it. I have been running about a 99.8 temp and had a headache all day yesterday. the funeral was yesterday also. I could be so tired from the emotional drain this week has provided but the weather has also been nasty. I will let you know on ch 11. the family is avoiding me like the plague so all i have is you guys lol. So Review and show me lots and lots of love. Maybe I will have ch 11 up tonight! The more reviews the quicker you get chapter 11!

Amy Bee

Chapter 12

Ok Everyone here is Chapter 11. They have messed with the Editor I noticed so sorry if things look funky. Their is a lemon first thing Ch 12 is flowing out to. It will also have the change of POV's So i hope you enjoy this! I dont have h1n1 I just had a viral infection. Now I have to give a shout out before you begin. Night Orchid lol she is a trip! I love reading all of your reviews but she left one a few chapters back that I thought was the best ever. Night Orchid 2009-09-23 . chapter 9 I can see the stormy waters arriving! I am putting on my life jacket and heading into the storm...bring it on ;-) Excellent chapter! Lmao Her reviews always have something in them hilarious. her last had a THUD in it lmao. I love hearing from you guys and I would love for our review numbers to sky rocket! Im going to start pouting. I hope I dont have to with hold chapters from you guys because it isnt getting enough reviews. lol I am getting all sorts of adds as favorites and story alerts and I LOVE IT! Thanks you guys rock! So keep it up and review review review!

Single Mom

Ch 11

Details and Messages

Edward had slipped off my shoes and messaged my feet. I had not been that relaxed in years. I had changed into a pair of his boxers and a t shirt and was lying across his bed waiting on him to get done with his shower.

I hadn't realized I was half asleep until I felt Edward over the top of me. He was messaging my shoulders and it felt amazing. I let out a little moan making him laugh lightly.

"I take it you are enjoying this" he said softly in my ear.

"Is it that noticeable" I laughed.

Single Mom

"Maybe a little" he said kissing me on my neck.

"Well I would turn to argue but I am too comfortable" I said a little groggy still from being half asleep and the relaxation that was being given.

"Well don't I feel slightly used" he laughed above me.

"You started it not me, besides not that I am complaining; I was half asleep until you came in. So you shouldn't feel used" I giggled.

He climbed off of me and rolled me towards him. He was shirtless and his hair was still dripping wet. Little droplets of water were scattered across his chest. I could defiantly wake up for a moment like this.

"You look pretty awake to me" he smiled at me. I was in his arms staring up at him with a smile.

"I am now thanks to you" I said as I ran my hand up his wet chest to his neck pulling him closer so I could kiss him. He obliged my desire and kissed me wrapping his arm around me to pull me closer. I was pressed against his chest. I couldn't help myself from tangling my hands in his tasseled wet hair. As I did I ran my tongue across his lip enticing a slight moan from him. This made me want him even more.

Our kiss deepened and our tongue's battled for dominance, while our legs found themselves tangled with each other. His hands ran up and down my body. He made his way back up under the shirt and lightly brushed my breast, making me press myself closer and nip his bottom lip softly. He got the idea and took my breast fully in his hand teasing my nipple. Our kiss got even more passionate, if that were even possible.

Finally neither of us could take it any longer. Edward slowly slid me out of his shirt and boxers, leaving me in my black lacy thong. I didn't have much to help Edward out of considering he was still in his towel.

Single Mom

He made his way from my neck down my body, kissing my breast and tonguing my nipple, down my stomach to my hip. He kissed me softly right above the lace that left little to the eye. He slowly slid the thong off. I was fully exposed and I liked it. The way he looked at me like he could devour every inch of me sent chills down my spine and heated my core. I pulled him back up to my mouth and our kissing returned to a passionate embrace.

He was now hovering over me and his towel was gone. My hands roamed over his chiseled chest while his ran over my body softly and strategically. Every where his fingers touched I felt a fire ignite. I could have been a piano that he was playing a very delicate song on. Our lips met once again and I could feel his hard erection teasing at my entrance. I had never been this turned on in my life. Just his touch could send me over the edge.

He slowly teased my entrance with his cock. Just when I thought he would enter me and send waves of pleasure crashing down on me he would pull back and tease me more. His lips caressed mine and his hands fondled my breast. I arched my back in pleasure as he teased me once again. He was firmly pressed against my core and I felt him inch further in with my arch. The teasing was over.

He slid in farther making me moan and arch to receive him. He pumped slowly and hard into me. I was tightening around him needing more. I needed to take no action though. He pumped faster our lips meeting feverishly between moans and screams of pleasure. Our arms holding each other close.

This was it. The waves of pleasure were coming. I felt my core tighten even more, making Edward moan and thrust harder. With a final pump I felt my walls convulse. I screamed his name in pleasure as I fell off the edge onto a cloud of pleasure. I could tell he had found his release at the same time as he went limp and kissed me softly and passionately before he fell to my side.

He pulled me close to him and I curdled into his side and rested my head on his chest. We had been together before but it was nothing compared to this. The second time we were together was more rushed and feverish. This was something more. We connected more than we had before.

Single Mom

We said nothing; we had no reason to speak. We had just shared something completely amazing that left me feeling more connected to him than I had ever felt before in my life.

I was tracing circles on his chest as I drifted to sleep blissfully.

EPOV

I couldn't speak. I was still coming down from the amazing high I was on as she fell asleep on my chest. She had been tracing circles aimlessly on my chest which only continued my high.

As she slept in my arms I thought about what we had just shared. I felt myself coming back to life. The truth was I had never experienced something quiet like that before, not even with my ex wife.

Ever since I meet Bella a few short weeks ago I was being pulled in. She intoxicated me and brought out a side of me I had never seen before. It amazed me and scared me to death all at the same time.

We had been moving slowly since we met and I enjoyed that. I felt no pressure to move faster with her. Neither of us wanted to get into something amazingly complicated too fast. But what we had just shared brought all the things I was starting to feel for her to the surface. She was amazing and everything I could have ever wanted in a woman.

But how do you handle a realization like that and still try and keep things slow and calm. The kids couldn't handle anymore heartbreak. Emily and I had just had a conversation about Bella and Macie yesterday.

Flashback

"Daddy?" she said as she looked up from her coloring book. We were in the music room. I was working and she loved to listen to me play while she colored.

Single Mom

" Yes sweetie" I said pausing from my music as she joined me on the piano bench

" Are Bella and Macie going to leave?"

" What do you mean baby?"

" Mommy left us. I don't want Bella and Macie to leave to. Macie's my best friend and I really like Bella." She said starting to get a little teary eyed.

" Baby Bella and Macie won't leave. Even if we don't work out I promise you can still see them. She and Aunt Alice are friends now to." I felt sorry for my daughter. She had not really talked about her mother in months and now she came up in this conversation.

" You promise?"

" As much as I can sweetie. Now why don't you go finish your picture? Paw-Paw Carlisle will be home soon"

End Flashback

I had trouble working on the piece after that and was thankful when my mother came to get us for dinner.

I decided I had done enough dwelling for the night. I set the alarm clock and lifted Bella so I could pull the covers down. When I got in beside her she curled back into her previous position. She kissed me softly on my shoulder before she fell back to sleep.

This woman was clearly doing a number to my walls.

BPOV

I heard an awful beeping noise and still woke up smiling. It was the alarm. Edward must have sat it last night. I was still in his arms and I decided to climb

Single Mom

over him to turn it off. As I straddled him and reached for the alarm clock his arms circled around me and he took me back to the bed.

"I thought you were asleep" I laughed as he smiled above me.

"I was before a beautiful woman climbed on top of me" he said kissing me.

"Well I will have to kick her ass" I laughed.

"You better leave her alone, I liked being woke up like that" I laughed as I felt his erection pressed into my thigh.

We spent the next forty five minutes tangled up in each other with the alarm still blaring. Thankfully he had set the alarm a lot earlier than needed. I hurried to the shower afterwards to get ready for work. I would be walking around like a damn clown for the rest of the day I was sure.

When I was finished I came out in my towel.

"Alice dropped this off while you were in the shower" He laughed and handed me a bag.

"Thanks" I laughed. She had gone by my house and grabbed a pair of scrubs and my shoes.

"All her" he said kissing me on the cheek and slipped in the bathroom.

I bet she had fun explain this to Charlie. I laughed to myself as I pictured Charlie's face when Alice showed up at seven in the morning. Today was our late day. The clinic didn't open until ten so the Therapist could attend rounds with the physicians and approve therapy plans.

I had just finished getting dressed when my phone rang.

"Hey Erin" I answered after looking at the caller Id.

Single Mom

"Hey girl, are you free tonight?"

"I should be. I get off at five and have to pick Macie up."

"Do you mind if we meet tonight. We have a bunch of details to go over."

"That's fine, where do you want to meet at?"

"We can do it at your place, Macie will be a lot more comfortable" she laughed.

"OK I should be home by six."

"See you then, bye Bella"

"Bye Erin"

Edward came out as I hung up the phone. He was in a pair of jeans and shirt less.

"You look hot in scrubs" he wiggled his eyebrows at me.

I couldn't help but laugh "thanks but you need a shirt before we have a replay of this morning" I said still laughing.

"I wouldn't be opposed" he said coming over and wrapping his arms around me.

"Ya but I have to work today" I said smiling.

"Ya I have some things at the restaurant to do and I have to finish this song or im going to get killed by my agent and the producers" he laughed.

We made our way up to the big house to find the girls eating pancakes.

I snuck up behind Macie and stole the bit of pancake she was about to take.

Single Mom

"Mommy that was my bite" she demanded. She was not a morning person at all. I laughed at my grumpy daughter and apologized and kissed her cheek. Emily was smiling happily and eating her pancakes. I acted like I was going after hers next and she covered her plate and gave me a look that said don't you dare, I bite. I died laughing.

Esme was standing in the door watching and I heard her laugh when she saw the look Emily had given me.

"She does bite" she said.

"I figured that look out" I laughed.

Edward handed me a cup of coffee and he took his place by Emily. I sat down beside Macie just in time for Esme to sit a plate of pancakes in front of Edward and I.

"Thank you" I smiled. I was starving and the pancakes were amazing.

We ate our breakfast and listen to the girls tell about the show. They were still excited and were both wearing princess pj's. They were going to help Esme today in the garden and bake cookies. I had called Jessica while they were getting me ready last night so Macie was staying with Esme today. It had actually worked out better for Jessica since she had to go to the caterers.

After helping Macie get dressed and them showing us their crowns and pictures from the night before it was time for me to go. I kissed my daughter goodbye and got a huge hug from Emily before I headed out. Edward walked me to my truck and kissed me passionately one more time before I left.

EPOV

After Bella had left I went back inside and told everyone goodbye. I knew I wouldn't get anything done here today so I decided to go to the restaurant. I could work on my piano their before everyone got there.

Single Mom

I kissed Emily good bye and was shocked when Macie threw her arms around me and told me to have a good day and be careful. She reminded me so much of her mother. She had not shown much affection towards me until now. I was happy with the idea that she likes me. It also scared me to death. The girls were more involved in this than we had wanted them to be.

I made my way to the restaurant and realized I missed Bella. I was covered in her scent and I was constantly thinking about her. I needed a distraction.

Emmet called as I was pulling into the restaurant.

"Hey Em"

"Dude, you need to feed Jasper and me lunch we have some serious stuff to talk about" he said sound a little worried and excited at the same time.

"Is everything ok Emmet?"

"Just depends on how you look at things. Jasper needs some serious guy time. I hope the beer fridge is stocked"

"Ya I just got a shipment in yesterday" I laughed.

"Good we will be there around lunch. We are taking the rest of the day off so be ready" he said sounding more excited now.

"I guess I better get to work on my music before you two show up huh" I laughed. Knowing how this would turn out. Emmet would probably end up drunk and sleeping it off in the apartment and who knew what was up with Jasper. I had no way of predicting what was up with him. He was always the calm one in check of his emotions. The way Emmet talked Jasper was having issues.

I made my way in the restaurant and poured myself a beer. I needed to clear my head before I sat down at the piano. I was working on a piece for a movie. It was the second movie in the series and I had to make it perfect since the last

Single Mom

composed piece was considered amazing. I saw the first movie and I had even read the books the movie was based off of. They were really becoming something big and this chance was huge for my career.

I sat down at the piano and switched the recorder on. My mind wandered back to the night I had brought Bella here. I started playing a tune that popped in my head. I had never played this before and the more I thought of Bella the more the music flowed. When I finished the tune I played it back. It was perfect. It flowed with the scene I was writing for and everything. I had shocked myself. Bella was the inspiration for it. A woman had never been responsible for any music I had ever written. I had written songs for Emily and even one for Esme. But only one song was ever inspired by someone and that was Emily. I had written the lullaby one night when she was a baby.

I spent the next few hours tweaking the song to perfection and writing the notes. I called the producer and he came to hear it.

He loved it and said it was exactly what they were looking for. It was even better than they had expected.

Emmet and Jasper showed up as he was leaving with curious expressions.

"Dude what's that about?" Emmet asked. The restaurant was not open until five and I was always the only one here until about four.

"It was the producer. I finished the song. I have to go into the studio immediately. I will be there the rest of the week." I smiled.

"That's great man." Jasper said. His brow was scrunched in a line. I could tell he had a lot on his mind.

"Dude you look like you could seriously use a stiff drink" I laughed. I needed one to.

"I think we could all use one" Emmet laughed. We made our way to the bar. I went behind and Emmet handed me a stool. I sat behind the bar with the liquor

Single Mom

and they perched in front of me.

"Ok so what's our poison today? I mean we don't do this unless we have some serious shit going on" I laughed and grabbed three shot glasses.

"Wild Turkey" Jasper said burying his face in his hands. This was serious. I grabbed the bottle and poured three shots. We slammed them immediately and Jasper held out his for a refill. I obliged and poured Emmet and myself another one.

"Ok who's going first" I said laughing after the second shot.

"Emmet can" Jasper said twirling the glass.

"Shoot" I said looking at Emmet. We had been best friends for years.

"I want to ask Rose to marry me" he said holding out his glass for another shot. That's how we did it. You said what you needed to say and take a shot.

"What's wrong with that?" I asked stupidly.

"I have no clue how to do it. Plus what if she says no!" he said anxiously.

"It's Rose man she will say yes to you" jasper laughed.

"Ya so take the Ashton Martin out and take her on a picnic or something." I laughed. Rose loved my car.

"You would let me take it out?" Emmet said smiling. Now that we had sparked the idea you could see the wheels turning in his head.

"Ya, she loves the damn car. You know her better than anyone you should be fine. NO screwing in my car though!"

"Deal" he laughed.

Single Mom

"Have you got the ring yet?" Jasper asked.

"I have my mother's I was going to use and get her a customized band to go with it if she says yes" he smiled proudly. I was proud of the big guy, he wasn't usually the romantic.

"Ok your problems solved. Jasper your next" I laughed filling our shot glasses.

"Promise not to kill me?" he asked suddenly very worried.

"If you cheated on my sister, no, I will kill you for something like that" I glared at my best friend.

"Nothing like that man" he quickly said sitting up straight.

"Then what the hell has you so worked up" I declared. Emmet must already know because he was smiling like a monkey with a banana.

"Alice is pregnant" he said calmly. He looked like he was trying to reassure his self.

"My sister is pregnant?" I said shocked.

"Yes"

"I'm going to be an uncle?" I asked still in shock. Emmet handed me my shot glass.

"Drink" he laughed. I did as I was told and Jasper took his.

"Ya man you're going to be an uncle and I am going to be a dad" he said taking the bottle and pouring our glasses again.

"Holy shit" I said coming out of the shock. I jumped over the bar to grab Jasper in a hug. He fell of the stool trying to get away from me. I guess he thought I was going to kick his ass.

Single Mom

"I started laughing and helped him up.

"Dude Congratulations" I said as I pulled my brother in law to his feet and hugged him.

"You mean you're not going to kick my ass?" he said shocked.

"NO man, you two are married remember" I laughed as I patted him on the back.

"Oh ya thanks" he laughed and sat back down. I went back behind the bar and took my shot.

"Ok so both of you had good news. Why are we getting wasted again?"

"Cause we are both scared shitless" Jasper laughed.

"Ya, that's why we are getting drunk what's your excuse?" Emmet laughed and took the bottle.

"I have no idea where to begin. I guess you could say I'm scared shitless to"

"Dude you just wrote a song for the biggest movie of the year, you have a hot ass girlfriend, a daughter that adores you, what the fuck are you scared of?" Jasper said looking at me like I was stupid and had lost my mind.

"Ya man seriously you have the top restaurant in town and everything" Emmet said staring at me the same way. I held out my shot glass and he obliged knowing I had some serious crap on my mind for me to be scared.

"Bella is exactly the reason I'm scared shitless" I said slamming the shot and taking the bottle away from him.

"Oh really what do you have to be scared of?" Jasper laughed.

Single Mom

"Dude I have no idea what is going on between us but I know she is breaking down every damn wall I put up to keep a woman out. There is just something about her that draws me to her. Hell I miss her right now and we have not been seeing each other that long. Our kids are crazy about each other and us. And last night OH MY GOD! It was amazing. This woman could seriously be the death of me." I said taking a breath and turned the bottle up.

"Dude stop pacing and share the bottle" Emmet laughed. I hadn't realized I was pacing behind the bar. I sat the bottle down and they both poured a shot and took it to catch up with me.

"So you're in love with her, what's the big deal" Jasper said slamming his glass down.

"Say what?" I stammered.

"Dude it is clear. You are falling in love with her" Emmet said slowly to make sure I caught it.

"You're both full of shit!" I yelled at them.

"Don't start that crap man. We have been through this before ourselves. Remember us sitting here and having this same conversation with each other two other times now?" Jasper laughed. He had a point.

"Oh shit" I said as I realized it was true. "NO NO NO! I am not going through this shit again. Emily isn't going to go through this again."

"Dude you have got to be shitin me! Are you seriously comparing her to that witch Tonya. You were never really in love with Tonya. Yall were convent for each other that is it. Besides you can't hide under a rock." Jasper said slapping me upside the head.

"Don't do that shit" I growled.

"You need to calm the hell down or I'm going to sit on you" Emmet laughed.

Single Mom

I pictured Emmet sitting on me and I burst out laughing. We were seriously buzzing.

"OK fine, say I am. We are taking this slow remember. What if she doesn't feel the same way?" I asked the two men I considered brothers. What if she didn't feel the same way? I would defiantly be hurt and Emily would be to.

"Well take it slow. Whatever works best for you. But dude stop beating yourself up because you are falling in love with her. This could be the best thing that ever happened to you and Emily. You wont find out unless you let it happen." Jasper said.

"Ya we will see" I said taking another shot.

Hope you Enjoyed it! Ch 12 will be up soon I promis. Even quicker with a lot of reviews! Do you think we can get to 50 on this chapter? I wanna know what you think of Edwards POV and the lemon haha so please be sweet to me and review! Ok going to work on Ch 12 hahah love you guys leave lots of love for me! im so excited aobut this chapter it is my favorite. and im ready for chapter 12!

Chapter 13

Hey everyone. So this is kinda a filler chapter. The POVS change up several times between Bella and Edward. I think now that he is pippin in I am not sure he will shut up. But this is a side of Edward and the boys you got a glimpse of in the last chapter. You guys almost hit 50. We got 41 as of posting this chapter. I hope the review sky rocket cause I want it to have lots :)

But this chapter is a little shorter than previous chapters and is leading up to a major weekend. Then comes court and what happens over the weekend.

I will also work on getting editing done to the story.

Thank you all who have reviewed. Momams Flora 73 and Night Orchid you guys rock my socks!

Hey Night Orchid hows the black lace coming? we might see some hot pink or somethin in the next chapter ;) hell i might even add a few bells for ya lmao

See ya at the bottom:)

Disclaimer I do not own twilight lol

Single Mom

Ch. 12

Drunken days and lonely nights

BPOV

My day had been great. Alice met Angela and I for lunch and she was

Single Mom

bouncing off the walls. She had told us she was pregnant. She was worried about Jasper though. Apparently he had seemed scared shitless to use her exact words. She told us what the guys usually done when something major came up. Angela had called Ben to see if Emmet was still at work. He wasn't and Edward wasn't answering his phone. Alice decided to get Carlisle to go check on them. Alice had hung around the hospital with me this afternoon since we only had a few patients. Angela had even hung out in the clinic since Carlisle was gone.

It had been a great afternoon all and all. We had not heard from Carlisle so we figured the guys were fine. I followed Alice to Esme's so I could pick up Macie. I had left early so I had about two hours before I had to meet Erin.

"Come on I am sure mom has tea made" Alice laughed and lead the way. We were greeted by two very hyper little girls.

"Mommy and Alice are here!" Macie bounced.

"Aunt Alice Bella!" Emily yelled happily running up to us. They were very happy to see us.

"Hey" we both laughed catching the girls. Macie had run to me while Emily had run to Alice. We made our way to the kitchen to find Esme dancing around the kitchen listening to a Madonna CD while she cooked. The girls joined her as Alice and I stared in shock.

Esme made a quick turn and saw us and busted out laughing.

"Where's my mother and what have you done with her?" Alice teased.

"Oh whatever Alice" she laughed as she paused the CD.

"Ya ok mom" She laughed and walked to the refrigerator.

"You didn't think I looked this good just from gardening did you" she teased and tossed her hair back.

Single Mom

"You are hilarious today" she laughed.

"Oh Well How was your day Bella?"

"It was great" I said seeing the glare Alice was giving me. She wanted to tell Esme in a special way.

"That's good. Would you like to stay for dinner?"

"Oh I can't tonight. I have to meet Erin to go over everything for court. Thank you anyway though." I smiled. I had learned real quick she loved to cook for everyone.

"No problem dear, there are plenty of other nights" she laughed and turned the CD back. Material girl blared throughout the kitchen.

We had a cup of tea before Macie and I headed home. Alice and Esme had tried to get details about Edward and I but I wasn't budging. We were on our way home now and I realized had no clue what to fix for dinner.

"So Macie Moo what do you want for dinner tonight?"

"Pizza" she laughed happily.

"Pizza it is then. Erin will be over tonight so we have to be good girls while her and mommy work, ok?"

"Ok mommy can I watch TV with Granddaddy?"

"That's fine with me" I said pulling into our driveway. Charlie pulled in as I was helping Macie out of the car. She ran to him and wrapped herself around his leg and went into detail about the Princes show. I laughed as he made his way into the house giving her a lift with her still wrapped around his leg.

EPOV

Single Mom

Two bottles later of Wild Turkey Carlisle showed up. Apparently the girls were on to us so they sent him to check up on us. Alice had made the mistake one other time and swore she would never do it again after finding Emmet drunk and crying. He and Rose had their first fight and Emmet was a mess. Even when I had been in Alaska the little gatherings happened on visits.

We were now at my apartment in Port Angeles, with Carlisle of course. Jasper was puking and feeling like an idiot for flipping out. Emmet was laughing hysterically at Jasper and still very drunk after a pot of coffee. I had a massive headache and was laid across the couch with a towel over my head.

"Remind me again why we do this?" I asked from underneath my towel.

"I would love to know, and why am I never invited?" Dad laughed fixing Jasper and I a drink to take some Tylenol.

"Dude It's just us, it's what we do." Emmet laughed even more falling off the stool he was sitting on. It wasn't the first time since we made it to the apartment. It was more like the third time.

"That's what you get for laughing at me" Jasper said kicking him as he passed to take the love seat.

Carlisle tossed him a wet washcloth and brought us both or drinks and medicine.

"Do you guys keep me out of so I can take care of you afterwards?" He laughed and sat in the recliner.

"Well unless you just show up at them you really don't have to have an invitation. I guess you just have to have something major to talk about" I shrugged.

"I guess I am a lucky man then" he laughed.

"What do you mean?" Jasper asked uncovering his face to look at my father.

Single Mom

"I am perfectly content staying sober. And I know you guys well enough to know that each and every one of you have women trouble when something like this happens. I have none and if I did I don't think you guys would want to hear about it" he smirked.

"Point made" I laughed.

I realized Emmet wasn't laughing anymore so I decided to brave the headache and look over the couch. Just as I suspected he had passed out finally.

"Ok who is calling Rose and who is getting the blankets and pillows?" I laughed getting comfortable again. He would just have to sleep it off.

"I am doing neither, your mother is cooking those great pork chops so I am going home. Plus I am not dealing with Rose. You boys get yourself into it you can get yourselves out" he laughed and got up.

"Thanks dad" I laughed and waved bye.

"Bye boys have fun with drunk Emmet and a pissed Rose" he laughed as he shut the door. He never cursed. But he was dead on the nail about Rose.

"Rock paper scissors loser calls Rose" I said quickly.

"Deal" Jasper said sitting up.

We played our game quickly and I lost.

"Damnit" I shouted as Jasper just smirked at me and handed me the phone.

Jasper went and grabbed the blanket and pillow for Emmet and sat him up.

I called Rose.

"Hey Rose" I said nonchalantly when she answered.

Single Mom

"Edward, where is Emmet?" She asked calmly.

"We'll see the thing is..." she cut me off.

"You guys had a little get together in the restaurant didn't you?" She said calmly.

How the hell did the women figure this out? Alice had figured it out fairly easy, so I guessed she had informed Rose at some point. Maybe Bella didn't have a clue.

"Um ya" I said sheepishly.

"Just leave him a message for me will you?"

"Um ok" I said grabbing a pen and piece of paper.

"Tell him he better like sleeping on the floor because that's where he is going to be staying if he doesn't have his ass home by seven" she said still very calm.

"Um Rose, he is passed out cold in the floor"

"I don't care if he is dancing with the queen of England naked. He better have his ass home. Thanks for calling talk to you later" she said and hung up the phone. Well shit. He would kill us if we didn't get him home.

"How did it go?" Jasper asked.

"She was very calm, which scared the shit out of me" I laughed.

"What's the damage then?"

"She wants him home by seven or he is screwed"

"How the hell are we going to do that? It's six now!" He jumped up.

Single Mom

"Well is it really our place to get him their?" I mused.

"Would he do it to us?" Jasper looked at me like I was stupid.

"You have a point. We could just dump him on the doorstep and call Rose to let her know he made it home" I laughed.

"Let's just get him up" he laughed.

We got Emmet awake fifteen minutes later. We barely made it to the apartment Rose and Emmet shared. She was standing on the stoop tapping her foot and looking at her watch.

"Perfect timing" she smiled "I was just about to lock the door on you"

"Oh babe I'm sorry" he said trying to hug her.

"Not until you have showered, you stink" she said shoving away from him and walked inside. He was defiantly going to get it. He waved and headed in with his head down. Jasper and I just laughed. We headed to my house. Alice was waiting on him when we pulled up. I smiled at him and laughed as he went to his wife. I had no one to yell at me thankfully because my headache was still hanging around. I made my way inside to find my daughter.

BPOV

Erin and I were already going over everything when the pizza arrived. Charlie fixed Macie and him a plate and headed back to the living room after giving Erin and I a beer to go with the pizza. He said he figured we would need it the way we were already going over everything. He was right of course.

"OK Bella, I got every police report you have filled against James and Victoria. I just need you to go over them and refresh on everything. Your statements have to match up with these just in case." She said handing me a folder.
"I am sure I won't have a problem remembering them all"

Single Mom

"It's just better that you refresh. I don't want them pulling any surprises on you if you have to take the stand. Are you sure I know everything?"

"Yes you know everything." I said flipping through the folder. This was going to be hell if I had to relive all this in front of a court room.

We were still sitting at the table going through everything when Macie came to kiss me goodnight. Charlie was putting her to bed for me tonight since Erin and I were so wrapped up.

We finally finished up for the night about eleven.

"Don't worry Bella everything will be fine." Erin said hugging me goodbye.

"Thanks, I trust you" I laughed before we said our goodbyes.

I headed up the stairs to get ready for bed. I went in Macie's room and kissed her forehead softly before heading to my room.

I grabbed my cell to charge it for the night when I realized I had a new message.

Bella,

Sorry I missed your call today I was a little busy with Jasper and Emmet. Have a goodnight

B.

Well isn't that nice. It was too late to send anything now so I just plugged my phone up and changed for bed. As soon as my head hit the pillow I was out.

EPOV

I felt awful for not calling Bella back so I decided a text would have to do. She didn't need to know I spent my Tuesday afternoon drunk. I was lying in my bed thanking about the day. My music was going to be in a major motion picture. A

Single Mom

vampire love story at that! Twilight was huge and my music was going to be part of it. I smiled to myself. This was huge.

I wish I could have told Bella.

Bella, damn I missed her right now. After last night she had consumed my thoughts. I had not actually had a chance to be happy about the music because I was too worried about my feelings towards her. Now I knew.

Emmet and Jasper were right, for once. I was falling in love with her and I was falling hard. I would defiantly have to see her tomorrow since I couldn't hold her tonight. But my pillow would have to do for tonight.

I turned over on my side and grabbed the pillow Bella had slept on the night before. It still smelt like her, absolutely amazing. I drifted off to sleep hugging the pillow.

BPOV

The next few days had been filled with meeting Erin after work. Edward and I had not seen each other since Tuesday morning and it was now Friday. He was busy till late at night and so was I. He wouldn't tell me what he was up to when we had the chance to talk. We would send each other flirty text messages and talk as much as we could.

I was on lunch and had just grabbed a soda when my phone buzzed in my pocket. I had a message from Edward. I couldn't help but smile just seeing I had one from him.

I miss you

E

I sat down and started typing back. Angela was off today so I was alone for lunch and had plenty of time to flirt back.

Single Mom

I miss you to actually;)

B

Really? I was hoping you would say that. Do you have time to call me?

E.

Our texting had been the same all week but we hadn't had a chance to talk until late in the evenings. So I decided to call.

"Hey beautiful" he answered. I know I blushed just hearing him say it.

"Well hey" I laughed.

"You really shouldn't laugh. I am just speaking the truth" he flirted.

"Ok well I will try not to next time. What's up I don't have long I just really had time for a quick break we have patients lined up all day"

"Well I want to see you" he said.

"Well when do you want to see me?"

"Tonight and the rest of the weekend" I could hear him smiling through the phone.

"Well considering we both have kids I don't see how it could be all weekend" I laughed.

"Well I thought of that. I want you and Macie to go to dinner with Emily and I. She wants Macie to spend the weekend with her and Esme said she would watch them tomorrow night."

"Well don't you just have this planned out. But it sounds fun. Erin is coming over Sunday afternoon, we have to finish going over everything before court

Single Mom

Monday." I told him.

"Great we will pick you two up at six thirty"

"Ok"

"See you then beautiful"

"See you then" I laughed after I hung up the phone. Maybe I would ask him about his drunken day this weekend.

EPOV

The week had been long. I wanted to see Bella on Wednesday but I was stuck in recording. Esme and Emily had actually planed this weekend I was only in charge of getting Bella to go along with it. So when she agreed I was ecstatic. I had missed her like crazy all week. I had been distracted several times by thoughts of her in recording. The producer had gotten aggravated with me and sent me on a break today. I had taken that chance to talk to Bella. She still had no clue about the movie.

Thankfully Esme had arranged a nice weekend for us. I was sure Alice had played a part in it.

Bella would need it since she had court Monday. I had honestly been miserable all week. I wasn't able to be there for her with all the preparation and I wasn't sure I was going to be able to be there for her the day of court because of recording.

I really needed this weekend my head was fried from over thinking and worrying about everything. I had worried myself almost sick over if she was feeling the same way or not. Maybe this weekend we would find out.

Like I said Shorter and changed POVS several times. But I hope you liked it and I want to hear from you.

Single Mom

This story has 5,456 hits 42 favs and 48 alerts and 41 reviews as of posting time! I am proud of that! I would like the reviews to go up though. I will have chapter 13 up as soon as I can. It has to be just right ;) So let me know what u thought about this and chapter 11 wich is my favorite chapter so far.

So can you get the review numbers up? I would love you forever :D

Amybee

Chapter 13 Seattle

Hey everyone! Guess what im still alive and didnt forget about this story. I am really sorry it has taken me a little while to update the last two chapters. I have had a lot of well man problems on top of all other sorts of stress. I decided to hide from the world for a few days this weekend left saturday after a horrible night out and came back yesterday. (tuesday). But here is this chapter and I swear ch 14 is done to. I was still writing while I was hiding. lol. I have also came up with another story plot!

Shout out to NightOrchid for the pep talk :) U rock Chicka! She is a killer reviewer and an awesome reader and proud to say friend :)

I will be writing it out in my spare time I am still focusing on this one only I will get a intro for it together and introduce it to u guys an see what you think. Also for more announcements see bottom :)

Single Mom

Ch. 13

Seattle

BPOV

"Edward that was amazing" I giggled and curled into his side still out of breath.

He kissed my forehead and smiled "I agree".

We had spent the past two hours in bed. The first our was spent kissing and teasing. The second we were completely enthralled in the most incredible sex I had ever had.

Edward and Emily had picked us up this afternoon after I had packed our bags. I had no clue were we were going until we got here.

Single Mom

We were in Seattle for the whole weekend. Everyone of Edwards family was here. Alice, Rose, Emily, Esme, and Macie were in one suite while the guys were in the other. Edward and I had our own suite on the floor above them. Esme had demanded that we have some alone time. We were spending the day with the girls tomorrow at the aquarium and zoo.

After we were shoved out the door downstairs and told to go away, we made our way up to our room and had been locked away ever since. That was of course after we had dinner. I was hungry and thirsty now.

I was trying to crawl out of bed when Edward grabbed me and pulled me back.

"Were exactly do you think your going?" he said kissing me deeply.

"I'm thirsty" I laughed and wiggled my way out of his grasp. I tossed his t shirt on and pulled on my hot pink lacy boy shorts.

"Damn woman" I heard Edward laugh.

"What" I laughed and tossed him a bottle of water from the mini fridge.

"You just look really hot in my shirty" he smiled and started towards me.

"Whatever Cullen" I laughed and ran to the bathroom. I needed a shower.

EPOV

That woman was going to be the death of me. I took a swig of my water and fell back into the pillows as she shut the bathroom door.

I can't believe I almost told her how I felt in the middle of that! What the hell was I thinking? Obviously I wasn't.

What am I going to do now. I'm not sure what she wants from all this. Hell to be honest I hadn't wanted anything serious when I first started seeing her. But the moment I saw her I was mesmerized. I tried to avoid her at first but I didn't

Single Mom

want anything more than just to talk to her. That was a mistake. After talking to her I wanted to kiss her and after kissing her I wanted all of her.

Now I am falling in love with her and it scares the shit out of me. I wonder if distancing myself would work.

Probably not considering how I had missed her this week. DAMNIT I shouted in my head.

Emily does not need another woman to disappear from her life. Here I am giving another woman the chance to do the exact same thing.

It's not that I think she would. It is just the whole idea what if Bella and I stopped seeing each other? The kids would clearly be devastated already. Hell at this point I would be to.

Damn women and all their complications.

Face it Edward your falling an their isn't anything you can do about it at this point. But I am going to hold back for awhile though.

She walked out of the bathroom with her hair wrapped in a towel and in my t shirt again. I couldn't help but smile as she dug through her bag. She was absolutely mesmerizing.

"You could have waited for me" I pouted as she crawled in the bed.

"So you could tangle my hair more" She laughed and kissed me. She was sitting beside me brushing out her hair and pulling it back loosely.

"Your all sweaty go shower" she laughed and grabbed the remote.

"Only if you promise to watch a movie with me when I am done" I smirked.

"Deal I will even get room service" she smiled. I pulled her to me and gave her a chaste kiss before I headed to the shower. I would worry later. I had her here

with me all weekend.

BPOV

I quickly ordered us a snack and started to look for a movie. I got excited when I found Twilight. I loved the books and the movie was OK. I was ready to see the second though.

I quickly ordered the movie and room service. I had some alone time now.

I was starting to feel really deep about Edward and Emily. This couldn't be good for any of us. It would break the girls hearts if we were to stop seeing each other. But what was really best?

I don't want to stop seeing him to be honest. But protecting my daughter was my job. Even if it was from myself and some disastrous relationship.

OK Maybe it wouldn't be disastrous but damn, I had shitty luck with men.

Screw it, I can't think about it this weekend. I shouldn't be thinking about things like this at all. But the point still stands the same. What am I getting myself into? I have a busy week. Court and patients galore should keep me really busy. I probably won't even have time to see him. Is that really fair?

Edward came out just as room service knocked. He was in nothing but a towel and water was dripping down his chiseled chest. He gave me that sexy crooked grin and I wanted to jump him again. Ya I would stop worrying about stupid stuff right now. I finally pulled my eyes away and collected the food.

We curled up in bed with our food and I turned the movie on.

"Twilight huh" he smirked.

"Whats wrong with that" I acted appalled.

Single Mom

"Nothing" he laughed. I wasn't sure if it was my poor acting or the fact that he was making fun of me for watching it.

"Sure" I said plopping a french frie in my mouth and pretended to ignore him.

"I actually wanted to give you something, since you seem to be one of those Twi-junkies"he said smiling.

"What exactly is that?"

He grabbed a gift bag from beside the bed. I hadn't seen it their earlier so I am guessing he stashed it their while I was getting room service.

"whats this?" I smirked as he handed me the bag. The movie was just starting to come on.

"Just open it" he smiled.

"Can it wait till after the movie?"

"Nope it wouldn't have the same effect . So just open it" he laughed.

The bag was red with black and white tissue paper sticking out the top. I slowly dug in the bag and pulled out a CD.

"Holy shit! How did you get this Edward" I screamed ad bounced up and down. Alice really was rubbing off on me. I was holding the soundtrack for New Moon and it wasn't supposed to be released until next month.

"I have connections, do you like it"

"I love it but still how did you know?" I was shocked.

"Well there is a surprise on the back. I wasn't really sure but this is how I wanted to tell you the rest of it" He smiled.

Single Mom

I quickly flipped it over and started reading. "What the hell?" I said slightly confused. He just busted out laughing at my reaction.

He finally calmed down and I decided I could continue.

"Why didn't you tell me?"

"I just did" he smirked.

"NO why didn't you tell me before?"

"I want it to be a surprise. I was the last one to record. So that is an official copy."

"I had no clue you were this kind of musician" I laughed still in shock.

"Well I have had a few pieces here and their nothing major. This is the first Soundtrack and major film I have had a piece in. You cant say anything though. Only you Jasper and Emmett know. I plan on giving mom Alice Rose and Carlilse their copy tomorrow."

"OK I wont say anything. Congratulations" I smiled and kissed him a little more passionately than I should have if I wanted to watch the movie.

He laughed and pulled me into his side and we watched the movie and snacked on our food. After another round we finally drifted off to sleep snuggled comfortably under the sheets.

EPOV

We had spent the next day running through the zoo and aquarium with the girls and my family. I gave my family their CD's at dinner later in the evening. Which prompted the group to want to celebrate. Esme and Carlils insisted on watching the girls for us to go out. We pulled into WaterTown three hours after dinner.

Single Mom

"OK everyone so since I cant drink I think you should all get sloshed for me" Alice laughed.

"Well I might have a beer babe but im not getting sloshed." Jasper winked.

"Emmett Is forbidden to get wasted tonight. It's my turn" Rose glared at Emmett. I couldn't help but laugh.

"So Rose looks like it's really just you and me since Alice is pregnant, Jasper and Emmett are still paying for Monday and I am sure Edward wouldn't want another hangover" Bella smiled sweetly.

How the hell did she know! I'm screwed now. She was waiting on an explanation. Everyone was wearing a smile. I had unfortunately decided to laugh at the guys for getting busted. Now I was getting busted right in front of them.

"Um well... you see... What had happen was..." I managed before she cut me.

"Don't feed me that line of bullshit." She sounded pissed "I have heard that before. What had happen was...you got wasted" she laughed. Why was she laughing? Was she not totally pissed I had gotten wasted with the guys and totally flaked on calling her?

"Um...Maybe" I smiled at her.

"Oh there is no maybe about it" Rose laughed.

"Let me guess you blabbed?" I glared.

"don't glare at her. It wasn't that hard to figure out when I was sitting with Alice and she sent Carlilse to check on you three" she pointed out.

"OK fine, ya we got wasted. But we only do that once in a blue moon and women were not supposed to know."

Single Mom

"Well you didn't make it that hard to figure out. Besides we have known for years" Alice laughed.

"Ya whatever" I smiled and went to grab our drinks.

Four hours later Bella and I were wasted. We were dancing when Jasper and Emmett dragged us out of the club. Bella and I had a serious case of touchy feelie going on. She was so hot the way she was dancing with me tonight. Her hips rubbing against me. I was ready to drag her out of their myself several times.

We were now making out in the corner of the suite like we were seventeen again. I couldn't wait for our room to clear out.

APOV

I was so glad to be back at the hotel. Four hours in a bar when you are pregnant and want to hurl everywhere is not the best thing. Jasper had watched me like a hawk to make sure I was feeling OK. I finally couldn't take anymore. I was glad to be celebrating my brothers success but only so much will do when you are a month and a half pregnant.

I was sitting on the couch sipping on a sprite to calm my stomach and watching Edward and Bella. They were hilarious. It was sickening to see that they had no clue how much they had already falling for each other.

"Rosie can you join me for a second" I called.

"Whats up Pixie" she said with a giggle as she plopped down beside me. She was tipsy that was for sure. But was no were close to wasted, unlike Bella and Edward ho were currently in a deep game of Eskimo kisses.

"They are absolutely blind as hell" I smiled and pointed to the drunks in the corner.

"No shit" she laughed.

Single Mom

"So what should we do about it?" I smiled slyly at her.

"He is in love with her Alice are you sure your help is needed?" she said cocking her eyebrow at me.

"Ah so you know about the little talk on Monday?"

"Yap I am well aware of it." she smiled.

"Well then you should also be aware of the fact that he is scared shitless of it. We all are aware how Edward can be. Look at what happened with Tonya in high school. Hell I didn't think he would ever settle down with her." I grimaced thinking about my ex sister-in-law.

"At least we have Emily out of that deal." She smile. I couldn't help but smile either. My niece was the best thing ever. Tonya wasn't the worst I saw him date but I wasn't happy when he proposed to her. Bella on the other hand was different. I hadn't seen my brother smile like that in years.

"Yap, only thing I don't regret about him marrying that bitch. But the deal is he is in love with her. She is in love with him and both are freaking out. I think they might do something stupid."

"Like what?"

"Well I have been watching them for the past few days. If they start to get to affectionate or to close they will both pull back. It is like they are trying to keep a distance between them. I don't think they even realize they are doing it."

"Woman you have way to much time on your hands these days" she laughed. It was true I had started cutting hours back to make sure I was taking care of myself. Plus I wanted to get my employes ready for when I cant be their all the time. I guess you could say I have been more intuitive these days. Them two were meant to be together and I couldn't watch them destroy it.

"True but hey when I see something good I know it" I laughed.

Single Mom

"Well what do you want to do about it?"

"Well Bella has court this week and said something about a lot of patients this week. She is also starting Macie full time in day care. Edward has to catch up on the restaurant from last week." I smiled suddenly seeing a great plan.

"OK so what does that have to do with the price of tea in China?" she said a little confused.

"Well what if we keep them extra busy?"

"Like absents makes the heart grow fonder?"

"Damn Skippy" I grinned. They were still snuggling in the corner. Edward would have my head if he knew I was meddling.

"Well lets just show them each what they are missing out on shall we? I think by Friday they should be able to see each other and both should be smoking hot" She smiled a wicked little smile.

"I like the way we think together Rose" I laughed.

OMG a Cliffy! Sorry But Alice and rose didnt want to Revil what they were up to. Sorry it comes out in the next chapter in EPOV. I hope you guys review. I missed you. I couldn't write with everything that was going on. My mood was off...ok it was shit but I tried my best lol. I did it over a few days. Now I will be updating my blog on progress and such. So if you want to know whats going on look on my profile. My google page is thier and links to all my pages. U can follow me on Twitter and see what im up to. The blog will fill u in on whats goin on with updates and such :) Love you guys please give me love we need lots of reviews. Reviews make me happy and want to write

Amy bee ;D

Chapter 14

hey Everyone!

So ya I know I didn't update ASAP. But i did for me. I got a job then she reconsidered hiring right before i started so I am delivering phone books right now. i know lame but hey its money. To bad i dont get paid to write haha we would all be happy. The new story is coming along also. i hope to have it up soon.

IMPORTANT:

I am looking for a Beta. The ones I had editing arnt so i am a little screwed :(Anyone interested in editing or beta let me know.

Thanks for reviewing.

Now this chapter I defiantly have a play list for. Michael buble- Sway, save the last dance for the ending and Lady Antebellums need you now for the first part. i listened to Kate Perry and Kelli Pickler also.

Disclaimer no I dont own twilight no I dont own Sway by Micheal buble she credited him haha. So go read and review! Reviwe is a must lol owwww and welcome our New reader

Single Mom

Ch. 14

Distance

BPOV

Sunday had been great, even with a slight hangover. I had spent the evening going over everything with Erin one last time.

Single Mom

It was now Monday and Macie's first day of day care along with court. She had Emily their so she was happy.

I was now sitting in the hall of the court house waiting on Erin. Today was the beginning of our fresh start.

"Hey Bella you ready to get this show on the road?" Erin said poking her head out of the court room.

This was it.

"Ya" I smiled and stood to walk in the court room. I straightened my pant suit and walked in. James was sitting with Victoria and both were glaring at me. Today was the day he would be out of our lives for good.

EPOV

I hadn't had a chance to see Bella at day care this morning or even send her a text to wish her luck. I had to hurry and get to the restaurant. Rose and Alice had decided I should be over worked this week.

Rose was having an employ appreciation dinner here tomorrow night. And Alice was hosting a dinner for her models, high end clients and a few CEO's on Friday.

I swear those women are up to something. I would probably realize what It was if they weren't keeping me so damn busy.

Rose was easy to please. I had free range over everything for her dinner. She didn't care as long as it went great tasted great and looked great. She said she didn't have time for details just to get it done, smiled and walked off.

If only Alice was that simple my week wouldn't be so long and busy. She had demanded to oversee every aspect. The damn pixie demanded perfection. At least I had until after Rosalie's dinner till I had to handle her.

Single Mom

"Mr. Cullen what color napkins for tomorrow evening?" Shane asked stepping into my office.

"Blue and make sure that dining room is closed off for tonight. We are using the catering dishes. I want the wine glasses and utensils out in place today. Also I want the blue chair covers in place. We need as much done as possible today. Tomorrow we have meal prep for the entire restaurant plus the party."

"Yes sir. We will get to work on it right away. Who is working tomorrow evening for the part?" he asked.

I had only recently hired Shane. He was still getting adjusted to the place and how we worked. The party's just added more to my pile of work. He had to be able to handle the place. I needed a life and my music career starting to take off.

"Working that out now, I want Trisha and Jamie in there and a back up, maybe Jessica.

"Trisha is on vacation" he reminded me.

"Shit, I forgot" I mumbled grabbing the schedule again. Could anything go right? She was the best.

"Jamie and Jessica need to be in the dining room and Irina for backup. Also I need Amba to bartend. I handled the kitchen already. And Vicki is expediting. You can rework the main dining room sections and maybe call someone in."

"Sounds good to me, anything else?"

"I think we are good for right now. We will rework the schedule for Friday's party Wednesday. Be prepared my sister will be here giving all sorts of orders. Apparently this whole place is going to be decked out. We will be going over menu choices and everything with her. This will give you an idea of any of the smaller parties we cater to." I smiled.

Single Mom

"No problem boss" he said before dashing out to set up the dining room and get ready to open for the night.

My week was going to be hell on wheels. I won't have time to see Bella or even think about her at the rate things are going now. I guess I will have time to figure things out anyway.

BPOV

"Bella your doing great" Erin whispered as the judge came back in. I just smiled my thanks.

James had been throwing daggers through his eyes at me all day. Victoria was only allowed in because they were now married.

"I have made my decision. But before I address that I would like to say something. .. Cases like this are always difficult. I look over every piece of information and hear both parties' reasons. It breaks my heart when to not see a fight." The judge paused.

"Ms. Rouge you are here by ordered to pay the back child support. Your rights will also be terminated as expressed also. MS. Swan is now the full legal guardian of the child. Court dismissed"

Tears filled my eyes instantly. We had our fresh start. James was now out of our life.

Erin and I were hugging before I knew it. I owed this woman my life.

"Erin, thank you so much. You will never know how grateful I am. I don't think I will ever be able to repay you." I cried.

"Bella just seeing Macie and you get what you deserve id enough. Someday, soon probably, she will have a father that adores her and you."

Tuesday

Single Mom

B

Sorry I didn't get to celebrate with you.

E.

E.

Its fine we will soon.

B.

Wednesday

B.

Starting to really miss you, Restaurant is keeping me swamped.

E.

E.

Miss you to... 5 new patients...and shopping with Alice tonight, won't get to call.

B.

Thursday

E.

Been a long week...Miss you & can't wait to see you soon. Good Luck with the Pixie

B.

Single Mom

B.

Glad to hear that. Miss you more than ever. Thanks please come tomorrow :)

E.

E.

Will see what I can do ;) XOXO

B.

Friday

EPOV

"You better be damn sure these are the candles you want Alice. I am not changing them again" I glared at my sister.

"They are, the place looks great Edward!" she bounced ignoring my glares.

My entire restaurant had been transformed. Nothing was ever simple with Alice. She had multi colored Gerber Daisies placed all throughout the restaurant. Candles were strategically placed while bright balloons covered the ceiling. She even had pink table cloths and chair covers.

"Thank you" I laughed.

"No problem big brother. You know this is huge for the boutique right?" She was smiling and bouncing.

"Yes Alice now can we go get ready now?" I had been here all day setting up and listening to Alice bark orders. Jasper, Alice and I were getting ready at the apartment since we only had two hours.

"Yap" she bounced and headed out the door.

BPOV

"Rose come on we are going to be late" I pleaded.

"Bella you wine too much about this stuff" she laughed as she finished curling my hair and pulling it back.

"No it just takes forever." I sighed.

"No you just don't do it" she smiled.

"When do I have time? I mean seriously, I get up fix breakfast get Macie ready and myself. You're lucky if I get to throw on some eye liner and fluff my hair" I laughed.

"Well you don't really need much. But Alice will be pissed if you're not decked out so here put this on" she said handing me a dress bag. It of course was one of Alice's designs. Rose had one for herself as well. Alice was using us to show off some of her newer work.

Rose was wearing a gorgeous red dress. It was a single beaded shoulder strap that split in the back to form an amazing cut out. The bodice had running to form a form fitting zigzag into a flowing loose skirt, paired with silver strappy heels. She looks amazing. There would not be a man in the room that wasn't staring at here.

I slid my black dress on quickly after checking the time. Alice had really outdone herself. It was a black halter top that hit right above the knee with a pleated satin waistband with a flowing chiffon skirt. The halter its self was beautiful. It was black beaded lace over nude fabric. I felt absolutely amazing in the dress. The shoes were a different story. They were beautiful but amazingly tall. Rose had insisted I know every detail to make Alice happy since tonight was her night. They were Vera Wang Lavender label "Falicita" Platform pumps. They were almost five inches with a one inch platform! They were black patent leather with a circular peep toe. They would probably be the death of me.

Single Mom

"Wow Bella" Emmet said as I came down the stairs.

"Told you she would look amazing" Rose beamed.

"Hell I'm not sure amazing is the word Rosie. I mean you are a complete knock out and I'm sure I will have to snap some heads. But Bella, damn woman were the hell were you hiding" he laughed.

"That's my daughter you're talking about" Charlie said coming into the hall eyeing Emmet.

"Thanks dad" I smiled.

"Well he is right Bella, you look amazing. Emmet snaps some heads if they get to close to her to" he laughed.

"Thanks everyone now can we go before I kill myself in these shoes" I laughed reaching for my coat. Emmet immediately grabbed it and helped me into it. He helped Rose into hers and we were off.

We pulled into the restaurant twenty minutes late.

"Go on in guys I will be right there. I just want to touch up my lip gloss and call and tell Macie good night" I smiled.

"You sure we don't mind waiting" Rose asked.

"No I'm fine" I reassured them as they headed inside.

EPOV

I finally could relax. Shane was here and handling all the major aspects of the party. The staff was all here and everything was perfect. Alice was beaming and not complaining about a single thing. The party had started twenty minutes ago and Emmet, Rose and Bella were not here yet.

Single Mom

"Don't worry they will be here" Alice winked and headed off to talk to a model dragging Jasper with her.

She was right of course as always. Emmet walked in with Rose looking as beautiful as ever. I swear her and Alice could be models themselves. But Bella wasn't with them.

I felt the fear bubbling up inside of me threaten to pour out of me. Was she mad that I hadn't seen her or talked to her this week? We shared a few text messages but neither really had time to talk all week from what I gathered. My week had been miserable and just the thought of seeing her had made it all better.

I really was in love with her I thought as I ran my hands through my hair and hung my head. She wasn't here and I was going to be miserable. The only thing that had held me together was that she was going to be here tonight.

"Are you ok?" my mom asked from beside me. Emmet and Rose had immediately taken a place beside Jasper and Alice watching me from across the room.

"I'm not sure really" I mumbled.

"What's wrong?" she asked very calm. She usually panicked when something seemed wrong with one of us.

"Bella isn't here. She was supposed to come with Rose and Emmet. What if she is mad I didn't see her or call?" I said giving my mom the sad puppy dog of a face I knew I was wearing.

"I think you are worrying for nothing Edward" she smiled. What the hell was she smiling about? I was going to be heartbroken if she was never going to see me again.

"She isn't here" I grumbled pointed towards the door and glance once again to prove my point.

Single Mom

I was completely lost in what I saw. The most beautiful woman I had ever had just walked in. She was shrugging off her coat and handing it to the coat check. My mouth must have been gapping open, because Esme giggled and pushed my chin back up and disappeared.

Bella looked absolutely mouth watering. A week away from her really shed the light on her. And as I stood there I realized even more how much I would do to keep her.

I started to make my way across the crowded restaurant to her.

BPOV

After checking my coat I immediately started looking for Edward. I made it two feet before I was surrounded by Alice Rose and Esme. Jasper and Emmet were laughing.

"Told you she looked hot" I heard Emmet laugh.

"Yes you did" jasper laughed.

"OH My God Bella you look amazing" Alice jumped up and down.

"Thank you, Rose did it all" I smiled.

"You look beautiful" Esme said hugging me.

"Come on let's get a drink" Rose said pulling me off towards the bar.

"Have you seen Edward?" I asked as we reached the bar.

"He is working on something for the party he will be around soon" she smiled and handed me a glass of Champaign.

Ten minutes later I still hadn't had a chance to find him. Alice had pulled rose and I around showing us and the dresses off. She looked amazing herself. She

Single Mom

had this glow about her since he found out she was pregnant. She was wearing a strapless silk fuchsia dress that was tiered under the bodice under a matching rose. The bodice was fitted while the rest hung loose making her look amazing and hiding her slight baby bump.

I was just about to make my escape to find Edward when I felt a pair of familiar arms circle me.

"I thought you weren't coming when I saw them walk in alone, I started to panic. Then Alice kidnapped you" he whispered in my ear making me giggle.

Alice and Rose smiled happily at us.

"Yes they kidnapped me. I think they were plotting against us" I smiled at the two women in front of me.

"We did no such thing" Alice gasped.

"Sure what ever, I am kidnapping her back now" Edward laughed and pulled me away.

"Where are we going" I laughed as he pulled me through the crowd.

"I want a moment alone with you before anything else" he laughed.

Before I knew it we were locked in his office and in a passionate kiss. I had missed him more than I had wanted to. I had also resided myself to the fact that I wouldn't stop it.

The man had me completely wrapped.

My hands tangled in his hair as his hand caressed my neck and cheek, while our tongues danced perfectly together.

"God I have missed you" he panted when we broke the kiss for air.

Single Mom

"I missed you to" I giggled.

"I am not doing that again at all" he said kissing me softly this time.

"Please don't, it was awful" I smiled.

"Shane can handle things now so I won't have to" he smiled back.

"Good, now come on before they send out a search party. Apparently I am some sort of model for tonight" I laughed and pulled him towards the door.

"I want another kiss first" he said pulling me back into his arms and kissing me passionately again.

"Now we can go... for now" he laughed pulling me back out of his office towards the party.

We were immediately attacked by Alice. She was freaking out over our absences.

"You two better not disappear on me again." She glared at us.

"Oh Alice it was like five minutes" I laughed.

"You will be going naked to your next event if you push me right now" she smiled evilly at me.

"I might like that" Edward teased making me blush crimson red.

"Whatever" she stormed off laughing.

"Come on dance with me" Edward laughed and pulled me towards the makeshift dance floor where several people were dancing.

"Can you dance?" I teased.

Single Mom

"You have a lot to learn, and yes I can. Can you?" he smiled and pulled me into his arms.

"Well just for that I think you will just have to wait and see" I wiggled my eyebrows.

We had just caught the tell end of a slow song. I was happy to hear I could see just how well he could dance and probably shock him a little. Michael Buble's "Save the Last Dance for Me" came on. The song couldn't have been more fitting.

EPOV

Bella totally floored me when we started dancing the tango. She was absolutely flawless and it made me love her even more. She had said she was clumsy so I was a little shocked.

"For a clumsy girl you sure as hell know how to Tango" I smiled kissing her one more time.

"Well I took lessons a few years ago. Really helped with my balance" she winked and headed to the bar.

"Where the hell did that come from?" Rose asked as we approached the bar.

"What do you mean?" Bella laughed.

"You know what I mean. "

"We just danced a little" I smiled.

"Ya that's not just a little. Everyone in the place was watching you. But you two wouldn't have noticed" She smiled. Bella blushed and sipped her drink.

"Well at least they got a good show" I laughed making her blush more. It was adorable.

Single Mom

"That they did" Rose giggled.

"Ok enough or I will never do it again" Bella declared.

"Fine can it Rose" I laughed and dodged as she tried to kick me.

"Ok ladies I really have to check on a few things can you two keep each other company?" I really needed to make sure Shane could handle things and try to get out of here early if Alice would let me. I needed Bella all to myself tonight.

"Yap" she smiled and I kissed her softly before I took off to make sure everything was taken care of.

Do you guys want pics for this? I have the dresses saved. So just let me know. Now Thanks for your reviews. I have stated several times I am looking for an editor or a beta wick ever. So please understand Like I have stated in previous chapters this story has not been edited only one chapter has been and that is ch 6 I think.

But I hope you liked it im going to leave you to review so I can work on the next chappy and the new story i am really excited about!

Amy bee

**Review is like makingout with Edward or chocolate depends on ur mood
But anywho please lol**

Chapter 15

Hey Everyone here is Chapter 15 As promis pics are up on my profile they have been posted for like two days now lol. This chapter has been done for like two days also. I sent it to my new Editor Scarletappy! and she had it back to me in like an hour! SO Everyone so thank her lol. I had a busy week so this is why it is getting posted now. Hope you like see ya at the bottom

Single Mom

Ch.15

Drama Whore

APOV

Edward had disappeared a few minutes ago. I sent Esme to distract Bella while I talked to Rose.

"So is it working?" I asked anxiously.

"Yes they are ready to leave. Should we keep them here longer?" She smiled.

"Well maybe, but I think it has worked already if they want to get out of here. Let's just see what happens." I smiled.

Esme POV

"So Bella, are you having fun?" I asked. Alice and Rose were defiantly interfering and I didn't want to be left out. I was going to do my part. Bella was perfect for Edward. I had never seen him like this. It was defiantly a change for the better.

"Oh yes, the party's great." she smiled.

Single Mom

"You know Edward was thinking you were not coming when Rose and Emmet came in alone"

"Yes, I bet his face was priceless. I was just checking on Macie though," she laughed.

"It was amusing. He was a little devastated until you walked in" I laughed.

"Awww remind me to apologize again later" she smiled.

"I think you showing up covered that" I winked.

We sat and talked a few more moments before I saw someone walk-in. She was dressed like a hooker. Then I saw her face. I must have gone ghost white because Bella was shaking me and asking if I was ok.

BPOV

"Esme are you ok?" I asked a little frantic.

"Um... Yes, excuse me I have to find Edward" she said walking off leaving me at the bar. I looked around the room and found her quickly talking to Alice and Rose. Rose looked like she was about to kill someone. I followed Alice's gaze to a woman standing near the door.

She was dressed in a blue and gold leopard print sequined dress. It barely covered her breast and was way too short. If the woman bent over you would be able to see everything! She was pretty but the way she was dressed made her look like trash. Her hair was bright blonde hair and kind of curly. Her makeup was piled on thick and bright.

I turned back to Alice who was mad as hell now and talking fast. She glanced over at me and continued her rant.

Who was this woman? She clearly had the Cullen women madder than hell.

Single Mom

"Hey beautiful are you ok?" Edward said appearing beside me.

"Yes but I don't think your mother, Alice and Rose are" I said pointing to them.

"Do you know what's going on?" he asked confused.

"Well I saw Alice glance at her" I turned my head to the bimbo.

"OH Shit" he grumbled.

"What?"

"That's Tanya" he said his face paling.

"What?" I said shocked. Now I knew why they were all mad as hell.

"Bella I have to handle this" he said as Alice, Rose and Esme came rushing over with Emmet, Jasper and Carlisle. Tanya was already making her way to us.

"Edward do you want us to take care of this?" Rose asked clearly fuming.

"No I will take care of her. Everyone just keep quiet." he demanded softly.

"Edward!" Tanya squealed.

"Tanya" he said dryly.

"Now that's no way to greet your wife!" she scowled.

"You mean ex wife." he voice was icy.

"Whatever," she smiled.

"What are you doing here?" he demanded.

Single Mom

"I wanted to see you silly!"

"So you decided to crash Alice's party?"

"I am not crashing it! I just wanted to talk to you and since you wouldn't answer my phone calls I had to come see you," she pouted.

"Tonight is not the time or place for any conversation with Edward," Esme said plastering a fake smile on her face. He glanced at his mother and she smiled sweetly at him.

"Well I believe this is between Edward and I Esme. So if you all would please excuse us, we have some things to discuss." Tanya said coldly.

I felt my blood boil. Why I have no clue. But the way she spoke to Esme and looked at the others made me want to knock her for a loop.

"Tanya we will discuss what ever it is in my office you have five minuets then you are leaving. With help or without" Edward said walking towards his office.

The thought of him alone with her made me madder than hell. But I couldn't open my mouth and speak. I watched them walk to the back of the restaurant with my mouth hanging open.

"Bella I'm sorry you had to see this," Esme said sounding ashamed.

"Why are you apologizing?" I asked a little confused.

"Because she is awful and I am sure Edward will tell her he is on a date."

"What does that have to do with anything really? I mean that is between them. She is Emily's mother after all." I felt myself shutting down. I was falling in love with Edward more and more ever second and now he was in the back with his ex.

Single Mom

"Come on Bella I need you for a moment" Alice said pulling me around to an empty place in the restaurant.

"What" I grumbled.

"I need you to do me a favor," she said seriously.

"I will try"

"Look Edward went through a lot with that bitch. I have no idea what she is doing here. But I won't let her wreck Emily and Edwards life again."

"What's the favor Alice?" This woman was going to play hell on my life I could see it now. My blood was boiling just because she was alone with him.

"Edward is head over heels for you. So I don't need you jumping ship because his ex wife walks into a party and drags him away for a discussion," she said with a firm tone.

"What the hell are you talking about Alice? Have you lost your mind with all those pregnancy hormones already?" she was pissing me off a little. I was ready to bitch slap her ex sister-in-law for bombarding her party.

"Honestly?" she said sheepishly.

"Yes honestly!" I demanded.

"Well all this week Rose and I wanted to keep distance between Edward and you." I cut her off.

"What the hell for?" I half yelled in shock. I was pissed. What gave her the right to play with my love life?

"Calm down. We just wanted you two to see what your lives are like with out each other"

Single Mom

"And that gives you a right to meddle with our lives more than you already have?" I said a little cold.

"Bella we haven't meddled...Ok we have. Only a little, see we love you. Hell Emily adores you! We just want to keep you around" she pleaded.

"She does?" I whispered shocked.

"Yes, we all do. You are the best thing that has ever happened to them." she smiled knowing I was forgiving her.

"Can I tell you something and you keep it a secret?" I smiled.

"Of course!" she squealed.

"Only if I can hear to!" Rose said coming into the room.

"Got to swear not to say anything though" I laughed.

"OK!" she smiled. Alice was bouncing.

"I'm falling hard for him. So stop medaling. I think I can handle it" I winked and walked back out to the bar leaving them with their jaws open. I heard Alice squeal happily when she realized what I had said. She come flying out of the room with Rose on her heels. They were smiling as if they just won prom queen.

I took my spot next to Esme once again.

"What got those two bouncing like they are in high school again?" she laughed.

"Just a little secret I told them" I smiled.

"You mean the one about how you are falling madly in love for my son?" she smiled.

Single Mom

I felt my jaw drop.

"Oh are you going to deny it?" she winked.

"Umm...no...am I that obvious?" I stuttered out.

"Only to me dear, but trust me I did as much medaling as they did" she laughed and walked off leaving me with a glass of wine.

These women are crazy, I thought smiling to myself.

My smile quickly vanished when I spotted Tanya coming out of the back. Edward was hot on her heels. She had a smirk on her face as she walked up to me.

"So you're the little floozy that he is shacking up with now?"

"Excuse me?" I said flabbergasted.

"Don't play dumb with me you little tramp. I won't have some random skank around my daughter!" she spat through her teeth.

"I think you need to look in the mirror Tanya. You are the one that hasn't seen or called your child in a year. Before you parade your trashy looking self into another one of my parties, I think you should think twice. Bella happens to be a friend of mine!" Alice spat at her from behind.

"You little..." Tanya started but was cut off.

"Little what? I think you had better leave now. I have wanted to get my hands on you for years. Don't think I won't drag a hussy like you out those doors and to the parking lot" Rose hissed grabbing her by the arm and dragging her out the door.

"I am so sorry Bella," Edward said from beside me.

Single Mom

"For what?" I asked confused.

"For her, she had no right to talk to you like that. I should have spoken up" he said ringing his hands through his hair.

"When did you have a chance?" Alice laughed.

"She has a point. But excuse me a moment I am going to go check on Rose" I smiled and kissed him on the cheek.

Alice followed behind me with Jasper, Emmet, Edward, Esme and Carlisle.

I opened the front door and Rose had Tanya by the top of her head.

I stopped and turned to Edward.

"Before I do what I am about to do I want to tell you something" Rose was holding Tanya still and listening to me now. I walked up to Edward and kissed him softly.

"I just want to say that I am falling for you and Emily and that this right here doesn't change a thing. Now excuse me I think Rose needs some help" I winked.

I turned on my heels and yanked a fuming Tanya away from Rose not giving Edward a chance to respond.

With one swift fluid movement, my fist made contact with Tanya's jaw.

"Now that was for Emily. Your daughter is lucky you are not around. I suggest you do her and Edward a favor and stay the hell away from them. I would hit you for him but I think Rose would like that honor. Stay the hell away from me bitch" I spat and dropped her on the ground. I turned on and walked back to the group that was blocking the door. Edward's jaw was dropped. Esme and Alice were beaming and Emmet was laughing hysterically. Carlisle and Jasper were standing their looking back and forth between the two of us.

Single Mom

I was half way back to the group when I herd Rose.

"She's right, this ones for Edward" she said as she dodged Tanya's fist and connected with her nose.

"That's my girl!" Emmet boomed.

Rose quickly joined me standing in front of the group as Tanya retreated.

"Edward sorry we beat up your ex wife" she said sheepishly.

"I'm not," Esme, said earning her a look of shock from everyone but Alice, Rose and myself.

"What? I can't stand that woman" she shrugged and walked back inside with Carlisle behind her.

Emmet wrapped his arm around Rose and led her inside with Alice and Jasper leaving Edward and I alone on the sidewalk.

"I'm sorry I don't know what came over me" I said low, it was enough for him to hear me. Would he hate me?

"It's ok, she deserved it," he said shaking the shocked expression from his face.

"It was out of line still," I said slightly ashamed. I would never regret that moment though.

EPOV

The woman had completely shocked me. She was falling for me. She had just punched my ex wife and sounded a little ashamed.

I quickly pulled her close and wrapped my arms around her.

"Bella I have to say, that was the coolest thing I have ever seen" I laughed.

Single Mom

"What? You mean you're not mad?"

"No, If you knew what all was discussed you would probably done more. At least before that I wouldn't have thought you to be a fighter but now I am sure you would have kicked her ass to Seattle."

"It just infuriated me that she had the audacity to do that. What the hell did she say anyway?"

"Well let's talk about that later. Alice is about to make her announcement. No one saw the little altercation so."

"I meant what I said earlier," She said.

"Promise" I smiled.

"Yes" she laughed.

I grabbed her and kissed her passionately.

"I was going to tell you something later but I can't wait anymore," I said pulling away.

"What?" she asked with a look of fear.

"I am in love with you. My week has been hell with out you and I never want to do that again" I smiled. Now that she said she was falling I had no excuse not to tell her. I just hope I didn't scare her.

"Promise" she smiled and through her arms around my neck kissing me.

"Yes" I laughed when we broke apart for air.

"Good cause I love you to"

I kissed her one more time. She loved me!

Single Mom

Just like that, all my emotional struggles disappeared. I knew I would have to tell everyone one what Tanya and I discussed soon. But right now I just wanted this.

"Come on love birds" Emmet laughed from the door breaking us apart.

Bella blushed and I kissed her softly before pulling her in the door.

Alice was ready to make her announcement.

So what did you think? Is Tanya really gone? What happens next? i know a lot of you were expecting a lemon this chapter lol but sorry that isnt how it worked out :D I twisted your leg hehehe. I hope you review! The more you review the faster I write hahah. Owwww and we have Alice's announcement! I am working on the new story as well it will be posted soon! A few more chapters!

Chapter 16

Hey everyone! Here's the next chapter! BTW i dont own twilight so BOOOOO lol

Well I have my new story up! it is called Misleading Life! Ya I am pimping my new story hahah just check it out and see what you think. It is a lot different than this one.

Also Thanks to Scarletappy for catching my flubs and my major boo boo that would have been confusing! She has a great story going called Night Janitor so go check it out to!

Ok Happy reading see u at the bottom :D

Single Mom

Ch. 16

Confessions

BPOV

We had made our way back inside the restaurant and had time to get a drink before took the stage.

"Thank you everyone for coming tonight!" She bounced making the whole room laugh.

"I know I planned this a little short notice but I have an important announcement to make and a few other announcements that go with it! Jasper can you come up here with me honey?" She smiled. We knew she had to be announcing her pregnancy but had no idea what else.

Jasper joined his wife with a wide smile. He wrapped his arm around her waist

Single Mom

and kissed her on the cheek eliciting an awed response from the crowd. She giggled and beamed.

"Jasper and I would like to start the list of announcements with our own personal one. For so long this company has been my baby. My life has revolved around Pixie. Jasper has always stood by my side proudly." she looked at him with love filled eyes and kissed his cheek before she continued. "I guess you could say we have two personal announcements" she laughed. "But like I was saying, Pixie has been my life. When I married Jasper Pixie was no longer my complete life. And well now Pixie will no longer hold the same spot in my life. Don't get me wrong I love my company and always will. But Jasper and I have discussed expanding our family." She beamed happily and handed over the microphone to Jasper.

"I am proud to say that it is no longer a discussion. My beautiful amazingly talented wife is expecting" he announced staring into her eyes.

The group of people started clapping happily for the couple as Edward pulled me close into his side. I looked up to see him smiling happily at his sister.

"Thank you everyone" She smiled and waited for the crowd to quiet down.

"Now I will be stepping back from the company slightly. I will still be designing and controlling my company. But my child is my top priority now. I will be designing from home. No worries I have taken great care since I found out I was pregnant to find just the right person to help me with everything. I have decided to bring in a Vice President. This company was as much her idea as it was my own." She smiled as Jasper kissed her and joined us. Rose and Emmet were standing beside us and Rose was smiling brightly. Edward, Jasper, and I were exchanging looks of confusion.

"I would like to introduce you to Pixie's new Vice President Ms. Rosalie Hale!" Alice smiled proudly. Rose quickly joined her and gave her a huge. We were all standing there in shock.

Single Mom

"Thank you everyone! I am getting a few looks of confusion right now from our family and friends" she laughed.

"Alice and I wanted to surprise you. We took great pride in hiding this. Edward just so you know the dinner on Tuesday was my goodbye dinner. I made my speech while you were occupied" she laughed. Edward just shook his head and smiled.

"Now I am sorry to have hidden this fact from them but it was crucial. Alice and I have discussed everything. She came to me when she found out she was pregnant and offered me the possession. To say I was excited was the understatement of the year. Hiding this for the past month was extremely hard. When Alice first had her idea for Pixie, I was proud. We are like sisters in our own way and now we are partners in crime" she smiled.

"I have been trained by the best in the fashion world throughout the years. I look forward to working with all of you and helping to continue Pixies rise to the top of the fashion industry!" She smiled happily as the room broke out into applause. Rose and Alice hugged before she handed it back over to Alice. She stayed next to her smiling.

"I'm glad to see I have everyone's approval." Alice laughed. "Now I also decided this little dinner to make very important announcements for Pixie! I am really excited to say that Pixie is expanding its line! We will be unveiling a new line of baby wear! Yes this was inspired by my own little bundle. I also had the inspiration a few years ago when my niece was born. This just furthered the idea. We will also be reveling a line of children's wear!"

Alice and Rose finished giving details to their guest. We all eventually got to congratulate them. Their night had been huge.

Edward and I finally got to leave the party. We were driving back to Forks tonight and leaving the apartment for his parents. We arrived at his parents a little later. Jessica had babysat the girls tonight and had stayed at the Cullen's. After filling her in on the night's events and thanking her she left, leaving Edward and I alone on the couch.

Single Mom

"Come on love, lets go upstairs" he smiled and pulled me up into his arms and carrying me up the stairs to his bedroom. I was exhausted by now and almost fell asleep in his arms. He sat me down and found me a t shirt to sleep in.

After changing in to the long t shirt I joined him in bed snuggling close. I had planned to ask him what was said between him and Tanya But I completely forgot once my head hit his chest and he kissed me on my forehead. I was out like a light.

I had amazing dreams. Edward and I were standing at a alter, with Emily and Macie beside us. We were just about to kiss when I was lightly shaken awake. I opened my eyes and Saw the clock first. It was Five thirty in the morning. My eyes then saw Emily standing beside me.

"Hey sweetie what's wrong" I whispered seeing her frown. I hoped she wasn't mad that I was in bed with her father. I couldn't stand for her to hate me.

"Aunt Alice is in the bathroom floor sick" She whispered. I quickly got up.

"Ok sweetie I am going to go check on here why don't you climb in bed with your daddy." I said hugging her and making sure she was in bed. I didn't need her to freak out if something major was wrong with Alice. I smiled as I looked back and saw them. She had her little stuffed elephant tucked under her nose and was curled up beside Edward. The scene was really sweet.

I made my way to the hall bathroom to find Alice.

"Oh Alice are you ok" I asked running in. She was lying on the floor.

"Yes..." she said before she sat up quickly and heaved into the toilet. I grabbed a wash cloth and wet it.

"How long have you been in here?" I asked wiping her forehead.

"Thanks...I have been in here for the past hour and a half. I will be ok soon." She smiled weakly at me.

Single Mom

"Why didn't you get one of us?" I half yelled.

"Bella it is just morning sickness. Jasper would freak out so I snuck out of bed. I am actually very good at that now." she grumbled.

"Well you are not good enough for Emily apparently! You scared the poor girl. How long have you been sick like this?" I asked calming my voice for the last part.

"The whole time, I didn't want anyone to know. I am sick the whole day sometimes and then others I just spend the morning sick. Please don't tell Jasper." she pleaded.

"Dam it Alice. You look like you are dehydrated already. You have seriously got to tell me how bad this is!" I demanded.

"Ok fine... it's bad Bella. I have been in and out of here all night. I usually am. I stay sick." she groaned.

"Why haven't you said anything?"

"I didn't want to worry anyone. I was going to say something to the doctor next week or to dad if it got too bad."

"Well it is too bad! Now are you done?" I asked.

"Yah"

I helped her up and waited on her to brush her teeth. I put her on the couch and covered her up. I brought her a sprite and some crackers to help settle her stomach. Once I had her feeling better she fell asleep.

It was now six fifteen in the morning. I decided to make my way back to bed. I would make her talk to Carlisle later. I probably wouldn't be able to go back to sleep but I could at least snuggle with Edward some more.

Single Mom

When I opened the door I saw the sweetest thing ever. Edward was in the middle of the bed with Emily on one side and Macie on the other all three sound asleep.

I stood there and watched them all three sleeping. I wouldn't mind seeing this all the time. Where the hell is that coming from? I mean yah I love the guy, but where did that come from?

Face it Bella you know you want to see this every chance you get. Macie hasn't been this happy in years. And Emily is the sweetest little girl. I definitely want them in my life.

I stood there and watched them for a few more minutes before grabbing a pair of Edwards pajama pants. I decided I would make breakfast for everyone.

I was standing over the stove stirring the eggs when I felt a pair of arms wrap around me. I jumped since I had my iPod in. When I cocked my head I was met with Edwards emerald eyes and his crooked grin.

"Good morning beautiful" he said as he took my left ear bud to hear what I was listening to.

"Good morning" I laughed and kissed him on his cheek. He had the funniest expression on his face. He caught the last of *Shinedown's Second Chance* before *Secondhand Serenade's Fall For You* started.

"I am going to have to see what all you have on that thing." he smiled. "What smells so good?" he asked nuzzling my neck still listening to the song.

"I decided since the girls kicked me out of bed that I would make everyone breakfast" I laughed.

"Did they really kick you out?" he smiled.

"Actually I think you need to talk to Alice when she wakes up. Are the girls up?" I asked quickly. I didn't want them to wake her up.

Single Mom

"They are still sleeping, what's wrong with her" he asked with a frown.

I had handed over the iPod and was taking out the biscuits.

"Well she is really having bad morning sickness. Apparently she was up most of the night. Emily came and got me at five thirty. She found her in the bathroom and I guess she was going to wake you up to help her but got me. You were pretty out of it so I put her in bed with you and went to check on her. I am making her talk to Carlisle when he gets here and she is awake."

"Ok I will keep an eye out for the girls then" he smiled.

"When did Macie come in their?" I asked curiously.

"I'm not sure really but she curled up next to me and was back asleep instantly" he laughed.

"Good morning!" Esme said happily as her and Carlisle came in the back door.

"Good morning" we both answered.

"Alice is asleep on the couch. She has had a long night." I said hoping no one would wake her.

"Is she ok?" Esme immediately asked worried.

"Yah right now she is. She was sick all night. I told her to talk to you Carlisle, when she wakes up. I made her drink some sprite and eat a cracker or two before I got her to sleep on the couch."

"Good job, I will check on her in a little bit. Breakfast smells good" he smiled.

"It really does Bella; I hope you found everything ok" Esme smiled sweetly fixing Carlisle and herself a cup of coffee.

Single Mom

"Ok wait a minute, where's my mother and what have you done with her?" Edward asked a little shocked.

"Edward!" she gasped.

"You never let anyone in your kitchen" Carlisle laughed.

"My point exactly" Edward laughed.

"Well Bella can use it anytime!" she smiled at me.

"Thanks Esme. " I laughed and stuck my tongue out at Edward.

He was about to say something when Jasper came sliding into the kitchen. Running in socks on a hardwood floor is not the smartest thing to do. He quickly balanced himself out before he started in. "Oh my God where Alice!" he demanded.

"Calm down Jasper, jeez you will wake her up! She is on the couch asleep. She was sick earlier" I reprimanded him. Edward and Carlisle were laughing at his little freak out while Esme and I found it sweet.

After we got Jasper calmed down I filled everyone in on what had happened this morning. Edward went upstairs to get the girls, Emmet and Rosalie for breakfast.

"I can't believe I was so blind" Jasper said hanging his head over his coffee.

"Jasper she was trying to keep you from seeing how sick she is." I smiled helping Esme set the table.

"But... I should have known" he sighed.

"Oh enough Jasper, You should have seen Esme when she was pregnant with Emmet. She did the same thing" Carlisle laughed.

Single Mom

Edward came into the kitchen a few moments later with the girls. Macie was sitting on his shoulders laughing as Emily was hanging off his leg giggling.

"Were did those monkeys come from?" I laughed.

"I went upstairs to get Emmet and rose and they attacked me!" he laughed making them giggle more.

"Well I guess we should feed them then" Esme laughed.

Everyone sat down to eat and was talking and laughing quietly. We were all trying to avoid waking Alice. We were half way through breakfast when she came shuffling in. She was ghost white.

"Morning" she mumbled. Jasper immediately got up to go to her side. But before he could reach her she passed out hitting the floor.

OK so just remember IF you kill me i can not update! I never leave big cliffys I know but I had to I was at 10 pages on my processor and I normally dont go past 9! the past few chapters have been at like 8 because I have been lacking on motivation for this story. I was going to start cutting it to close but it has taken its on little turn. It is going in its own direction lol. SO I promise! I absolutely promise that I will have the next chapter out ASAP even if im up all night writing it.

Thanks everyone for allt he love. I hope it gets more :D Oww and Please check out ML (Misleading Life) I am very excited about it and my updating has come back to life over it. :D

SO if you want an update to find out about little Alice REVIEW :D Dang i sound Evil thier dont I hahaha Like im holding her hostige or something. But she told me herself she wants reviews out the \$\$ lol.

Hugs an loves

Amy bee

Single Mom

V* click the button an review *V

Chapter 17

Ok here is ch 17 Thanks for all the love I hope to get more for this one! Here is the next chapter! I didnt want to leave u with a cliffy for long.

here is my shameless pimping of my new story Misleading Life. Hope to see u over thier.

Enjoy!

Ch. 17

Single Mom

Pissed of Pixie

EPOV

We had all been eating our breakfast quietly when Alice came shuffling in. She was ghost white and looked like she had been shivering. Jasper immediately tried to get to her side but before he could she hit the floor.

Everything had erupted into chaos immediately. Even though Carlisle was their, someone called an ambulance. Carlisle was actually freaking out so it was better that way. He was terrified something major was wrong with his only daughter and the baby. He couldn't think clearly. Hell, I was terrified. Jasper was holding her close when the paramedics had arrived.

We were now sitting at the hospital. Bella had taken the girls to the physical therapy gym to play with the balls and stuff to distract them. They had freaked out pretty badly. Emmet, Rose, and my mother were waiting in the waiting room. Carlisle and Jasper were with her in the back.

"I hope my baby is ok" Esme sniffled. I had been trying to comfort my mother the best I could. Emmet and I would take turns. Rose was pacing.

Single Mom

"Rose can you please sit down?" I asked as she passed me for the hundredth time.

"I will do as I damn well please" she growled. Emmett joined her at her side and led her over to a bench by the window to calm her. My mother patted my hand and smiled lightly at me.

"She didn't mean to be mean honey, she is just worried to," she said.

"I know that's why I decided to keep my mouth shut." I smiled as she laughed lightly. I was glad to see her smile.

Bella and the girls decided to join us again. The girls were smiling and laughing once again.

"How is she?" Bella asked sitting down beside me.

"We don't know anything yet, Carlisle and Jasper are still back their." I said.

Right on cue Carlisle came out.

Esme and Rose were at his side immediately and asking questions a hundred miles a second. He sat them down on the row of chairs before he told us.

"She is awake now. Jasper refuses to leave her side for even a moment." he smiled.

"Do they know what's wrong?" Bella asked.

"Yes, she is dehydrated pretty badly right now. She also has over exerted herself with all the work, standing constantly, sickness and over exertion all together. They have diagnosed her with Vasovagal syncope. It is pretty harmless. From all the standing it caused blood to pool in her legs, which lowers blood pressure."

"OH my" Esme sniffled.

Single Mom

"She is going to be just fine honey," he said kissing her cheek and pulling her close.

"How is the baby?" she asked.

"Oh the baby is just fine. Nice and healthy." he smiled proudly.

"What is the treatment?" I asked.

He laughed before he said, "Foot exercises, avoiding prolonged standing, especially if she gets hot, crowded places and lots of fluids."

"She won't be happy at all" Bella laughed.

"That's going to be one pissed off pixie," Rose said making us all laugh.

"How long is she going to be here?" Emmett had the since to ask once we stopped laughing.

"Oh she will be here a day or two maybe three. They want to get the nausea under control and get her hydrated again. She is also under strict observation. Nausea is also a symptom of this. So they will be running some test to make sure her heart and everything is ok just to make sure. They will be monitoring her blood pressure to make sure they do not have to take action on it. But she will be just fine." he reassured everyone.

APOV

It had been over a week since I left the hospital. Jasper insisted on taking my mother up on her offer for us to stay with them. He did not want me to be alone while he was working. So I was forced to stay at home with my mother.

I usually kept my temper under control but I was starting to lose that control here lately. Harmon's and the fact that everyone was treating me like a breakable doll was pissing me off.

Single Mom

I had spent this morning ripping Emmett and Edward a new one. Jasper and Esme had ordered them to take care of me for the day. In addition, of course I was the breakable doll that wasn't allowed to do anything!

When I say anything, I mean anything at all. They forced me to sit on the couch and watch them play the X Box. They had given me my laptop and I was content until I had to pee and wanted a snack.

The downstairs bathroom was being remodeled so I would have to go upstairs. When I had gotten up Em and Edward were immediately at my side asking what I was doing.

"I have to pee and I want some milk and cookies," I laughed. They were really over reacting. My whole damn family was. Even Bella was treating me as if I would topple over dead any moment. The doctors had cleared me of any heart problems and my blood pressure was fine. I had really been drained causing it all. I was fine now.

Emmet immediately scooped me up and took me upstairs. I protested the whole time demanding I could take a piss all on my own. That's when I started getting irate.

"Well you are getting an escort." was all he said. He had waited outside the door, carried me back down, and set me on the couch.

I wanted my damn cookies so I got up. Edward pushed me back down and set the cookie jar and a huge glass of milk down in front of me.

I jumped up and went off.

"What the hell is wrong with everyone? I can go piss and get a damn snack all on my own. You all have lost your damn minds. I will do what I damn well please and I suggest you pass this along to everyone else." I paused to take a deep breath.

Single Mom

"You all will stop treating me like I am incapable of doing anything. I will not be treated like this anymore!" I yelled and stormed off. I stopped at the base of the stairs and went back for the milk and cookies. I offered thanks and stormed up stairs locking myself into my bedroom.

Jasper had been trying to get in the bedroom for the last hour. I just turned the music up and ignored him. I was pissed at him to. No one was getting in here tonight. I had my own bathroom I was good.

Carlisle had been the brave one and brought me dinner. He smiled at me and I smiled back before I shut the door.

They were all going to lighten up or sty locked out I smiled.

JPOV

My wife had locked me out of the bedroom and refused to see anyone. I just lay around sulking. I couldn't stand for her to be mad at me.

This was the first time since we had been married she has ever been this mad. The only other time she ignored me was when we had been living together and I came home drunk from a night at the restaurant with Emmett and Edward. That's when she figured us out and would not talk to any of us for a week.

"Dude this is worse than when you came home drunk that time" Emmet laughed.

"Yah don't remind me," I grumbled. They both laughed at me.

"She will come around. But she is right we have to stop treating her like she is a porcelain doll" Bella said.

"Yah its going to bad enough restraining her shopping" Rose laughed.

BPOV

Single Mom

To say Alice was pissed was the understatement of the year. Edward and Emmett had called Rose and me when she first locked herself in earlier. We both left work and came right over.

She wasn't having that though. She yelled more when Rose and I tried to knock. Said we would all learn our lesson one way or another.

She had effectively made us all feel like shit for overreacting and overprotecting. We had all decided to hang out in the living room to see what would happen. Rose and I had pointed out to the guys that Alice was right we all had over reacted. So now, we were just waiting.

We battled it out on Rock band for three hours waiting. Esme and Carlisle had taken the girls for dinner and a movie after he took Alice some dinner. The girls didn't need to see the pissed off pixie or they would never want to watch Tinkerbelle again. I died laughing at the thought. Everyone was looking at me as if I had lost my mind.

"Care to share what's so funny?" Edward asked a little confused.

"I just realized it is a good thing the girls are gone" I laughed.

"Why exactly is it a good thing?" Jasper asked.

"They would probably end up being scared to death of Tinkerbelle if they saw this" I fell over laughing even harder. I was joined by everyone else at the thought.

Em POV

We had just composed ourselves from the thought of Tinkerbelle when Alice appeared at the bottom of the stairs.

"Alice I am so..." I started but she cut me off. She was standing there with her arms crossed over her chest and the meanest look I had ever seen.

Single Mom

"See what I mean?" I heard Bella whisper and snicker. Making everyone strain to hold back another laughing fit.

"WHAT THE HELL IS WRONG WITH YOU GUYS!" Alice demanded ringing my ears.

"Were sorry Alice," we all said at once.

"Are you all going to stop treating me with kid gloves?" she glared.

"Yes" we all said meekly. We sounded like a bunch of kids getting reprimanded. The pissed of pixie was scary as hell though.

"Emmett!" she said turning her glare on me and marching over to me.

OH Shit! She was going to kill my ass!

"Yes" I said meekly putting my best puppy dog face on.

"NO MORE SHIT!" she yelled.

"Yes mame" I said honestly scared to death. She continued to glare at me.

"Am I forgiven now?" I put on my best smile.

"I guess" she shrugged. I picked her up into a hug. I was relieved my life would be spared. A pregnant pissed pixie was scary as hell.

BPOV

Alice quickly turned her attention to the rest of us. I was scared. To think of her making Emmet that scared was awful to see and now her attention was turned to us.

"I expected this out of you Edward but this shit is stopping now!" she growled.

Single Mom

"I know I am sorry Alice. I will keep it to a minimum. I just worry about my baby sister and niece or nephew," he said throwing on that irresistible charm of his.

"That shit doesn't work on me" she laughed evilly "But I forgive you"

They hugged and she was now standing in front of Rose and me. We were sitting on the love seat were we had been talking while the guys were playing X Box.

"YOU TWO ARE MY BEST FRIENDS! I EXPECTED BETTER THAN THAT!" She yelled. Damn she was scary. I mean her eye was even twitching.

"Alice I am sorry. You would have done the same for me I know. Everyone just got carried away worried about you. Seeing you like that was scary." Rose said.

"Alice I am with Rose here. We love you is all" I said.

She was glaring at us still when jasper piped in.

"Honey don't be mad at them. They are the ones that got us to see reason," he said meekly.

"Fine" she smiled and winked at us. Jasper couldn't see her face because he was behind her. The poor man felt horrible. She was about to let him have a huge guilt trip.

"I am far from done with you!" she turned and pointed at him.

"Baby I am so sorry, I just love you and our baby so much. I..."

"UPSTAIRS NOW!" she demanded. She turned and winked as she followed him.

Once they were out of the room, we all busted out laughing.

Single Mom

"That was scary as hell! Imagining Tinkerbelle didn't even help," I laughed sending everyone else into harder fit of giggles.

Well how did you like the Pissed off Pixie? Let me know

Chapter 18

OK So here is the news about what happened in the office. Then there is also the long awaited Lemon I have been asked for lol. I had everyone thinking the chapter Tanya showed up in was going to start with a lemon. Lol So I worked the lemon in for you here.

Ok so I hope you guys enjoy that lol. But thiere is a poll on my profile for this story. Please let me know if you want a sequel to this story or not soon. I would love for your answer via poll that way I can keep track better.

Hope you like please review the lemons not my best. But I hope to heare from ya~

Ch. 18

Single Mom

Truth Be Told

BPOV

After Alice and Jasper returned from upstairs, looking quite disheveled, we were all sitting around watching Ghost of Girlfriends Past.

"Speaking of ghost form girlfriends past, what the hell happened in the office the other night?" Rose asked. We had paused the movie to replenish our snack foods. The girls had gone to bed shortly after returning with Carlisle and Esme, who were watching the movie as well. It was a Friday night after all.

"Yah" everyone said together looking straight at Edward.

"Do we really have to do this now?" he grumbled.

"I think we do." Alice smiled happily.

Single Mom

"Yah, I would love to know what that tramp had to say." Esme glared at Edward.

"Did my mother just say tramp?" Edward said looking around.

"Yes, she brings out the best in me." she laughed.

"Now back to the point we can address Esme and her name calling later," Jasper laughed.

"This is really going to bring the mood down a few notches are you guys sure?"

I patted his leg reassuringly. I had been wondering about this for over a week now. He had not even brought the topic up once. He had seemed out of it a few times this week. I had worried what she had said would affect us and now I was about to find out.

EPOV

I knew they would eventually want to know. I didn't expect it tonight though. I had thought about this all week and still was unsure what to do about it. I guess talking to everyone would help me figure it out.

"Yes we want to know Edward," My father said.

So, I started filling everyone in on what took place.

FLASHBACK:

We had just walked back to my office and she had me cornered. Her sick sweet perfume made me want to gag. This was not the woman I had married all those years ago.

" You know you miss me" she smiled and tried to kiss me. I turned my head and her lips hit my cheek.

Single Mom

"Get the hell off me Tanya. No I haven't missed you." I grumbled picking her up and sitting her to the side. I made my way back to the doorway so I wouldn't be cornered again.

"Clocks ticking," I reminded her as she glared at me.

"Well I really don't guess it matters if you missed me or not" she laughed.

"What do you want?" I snapped.

"Well I am sure my dear sister told you about what happened with Marcus."

"I know you tried to kill yourself and he beat the hell out of you in Greece that's all I know."

"Well see the kicker is I kind of owe him some money."

"So why are you here?" I asked confused.

"I need ten thousand dollars actually," she said plopping down in my chair.

"Well good luck with that" I shrugged and started out the door.

"See... the thing is Edward you will be giving it to Me.," she said stopping me in my tracks.

"What the hell makes you think I will give you ten thousand dollars Tanya? I have full custody of Emily and I have to take care of her. I don't owe you anything. You don't even pay child support!" I half yelled.

"Well if you want to keep full custody of her I think you will pay me. See I am a lot better now Edward and I am starting to miss my little girl." she smiled sickly at me. I was speechless.

"And yes I saw that woman you are with. Maybe I do not want her around my daughter," she said crossing the room and standing in front of me.

Single Mom

"What exactly are you saying Tanya?" I demanded.

"I am saying Edward, that if you want to keep your daughter I will leave and be gone for good. All you have to do is give me the ten thousand dollars to give to Marcus. And I will be needing twenty for myself." she said rubbing her finger up and down my chest.

"First don't touch me," I demanded. "Second who the hell do you think you are coming in here and threatening me?"

"I am Emily's mother! Like I said I am starting to miss my little girl terribly." she spat at me.

"So what are you going to do if I don't pay you?" I spat right back.

She laughed, it sounded evil to an extent.

"I am saying that I will get visitation with Emily. Emily and I could just up and disappear or Marcus could come after her to make you pay. He does know all about how financially stable you are honey."

"You are a piece of work. You have never cared about her. So now, you want me to pay you to get out of our lives? Wow you are such a bitch."

"Yah well at one time you enjoyed this bitch. You have two weeks Edward" she smiled and sauntered out.

"That Fucking bitch!" Rose yelled.

"Calm down Rose" Carlisle said. His voice was ice cold.

Bella was ridged beside me. I took a look and saw her jaw sat in place.

"I'm sorry I didn't say anything sooner. I just didn't know what to do with it all." I said under my breath.

"We pay her and get her the hell out of Emily's life for good." Alice said.

Single Mom

"But what's to say she won't come back for more. She is wanting thirty thousand dollars. It could be more next time." Bella said sounding very calm.

"Look I have a week left," I said dropping my head. Bella had a very good point. I had thought about everything.

"Edward?" Esme said drawing my attention back up to her.

"Yes?"

"You haven't changed anything about your office have you?" she smiled.

"Um no...why?"

"Well when I hade the video cameras and security system put in last year I had state of the art equipment put in." she was smiling even wider now.

"Ok and what does this have to do with anything?" I asked a little confused.

"Well they record voice also honey! It is fully archived and everything!" She said.

"Oh shit! Good move mom!" Emmett boomed.

"So you are saying we have this whole conversation on tape?" I said shocked. This turned the tables completely.

"Yep!" she bounced looking a lot like Alice.

"Get me the tape as soon as you can!" Bella said and jumped up and ran out of the room.

"Were is she going?" I asked.

"I have a feeling we will see soon," Rose laughed.

Single Mom

"Get me a laptop and my phone" Esme demanded.

BPOV

I was furious. How could that bitch even think about doing this! When Esme said the tapes were archived I knew exactly what to do.

I flipped my phone shut and walked back into the room smiling happily.

"What was that all about?" Edward said meeting me in the doorway. Esme and the others were surrounding a laptop and she was on the phone.

"My dad is on his way over" I smiled.

"Um ok why?" he asked. A look of confusion was crossing his face.

"Erin is coming as well. It is one of the perks of dating the Chief of Polices daughter" I smiled happily.

Before I had time to blink, Edward had picked me up and was kissing me passionately.

"Excuse me! Can some one tell us what's going on over there?" Emmett boomed.

Edward released me and pulled me over to the couch to join the others.

"Well I just found out one of the perks of dating the Chief of Polices daughter" Edward smiled. It was the first time he had smiled since the whole conversation started.

"Great!" Esme bounced and shut her phone. She turned the lap top to all of us.

"Look what I have!" she laughed.

"My mom rocks!" Emmett laughed.

Esme POV

I was scared to death I would loose my grand daughter. When I had remembered the security system, my worries started to slowly fade.

Charlie and Erin arrived at the same time. We had all discussed what to do about this. It was finally settled that we would pick up the official tape tomorrow and a restraining order would be filed. Tanya was to be arrested for extortion.

Bella intervening had taken any worry I might have out of her and Edward being together. I was crazy about that girl. She was everything Edward and Emily needed.

I knew they had confessed there love for each other but the problem now was making sure they stayed together and kept moving forward. Both of them had been hurt and were very well guarded.

Carlisle and I were finally in bed. I was snuggled up to his chest thinking all this over.

"Are you still awake honey?" I asked him softly.

"Yes, I was just thinking about everything." he said Turning on his side and wrapping me in his arms.

I wanted my children to each have a love like their father and I had.

"I was to. What do you think about Edward and Bella?" I said looking up at him.

"Those two are on to something," he laughed.

"That was what I was thinking. But you know they are both stubborn." I sighed.

Single Mom

"I have seen the way he looks at her. I think they will keep on going honey. Just don't meddle and keep Alice and Rose out of It.," he laughed.

"I would never!" I faked anguish.

"Honey, I was there for the Seattle weekend and I saw what the girls did with the parties and keeping them apart."

"Well it worked," I laughed.

"Well if you three don't stay out of it, it might not. They are on a good road now just let them figure it out."

"Your right. I feel better now" I smiled and kissed him goodnight.

BPOV

Edward and I were laying in his bed now. He had both arms wrapped around me and was nuzzling the back of my neck.

"Do you have any idea how much I love you?" he whispered in my ear. His breath on my neck sent shivers down my spine.

"No tell me again," I giggled.

"Well I could show you" he laughed and kissed my neck.

"Oh really?" I smiled to myself.

"Really" he said against my neck. I felt him smile. He continued to assault my neck. I couldn't control the little moan that escaped.

"Glad to hear you like" he laughed.

"Yes very much" I said in a low voice. It was hard to answer since my mind was in a haze.

Single Mom

His hand ran up and down my side softly as he nibbled on my ear. Each time my shirt would raise more. I was wearing only a pair of Calvin Klein hipsters. They were light blue and soft lace. I had taken off the matching bra when I slipped his Nirvana t-shirt on.

I turned my head so our lips could meet. His tongue ran over my bottom lip inducing another moan from me. I took his bottom lip and lightly sucked inducing a moan from him as well. His hand made its way under the t-shirt. His fingers ghosted across my stomach ever so softly as he went back to working on my neck once again.

I couldn't stand not touching him anymore. My hand found its way to his hair on its own accord. The things he was doing to my breathing had to be dangerous for my health.

"God Bella... you are driving me insane," he said.

"Me? I'm the one behaving," I laughed.

"Yah well you are wearing my shirt. That's enough to drive me insane" he smiled as he rolled me on my back and was hovering over me.

"Well I think I can help you with that" I smiled.

"Really, how do you plan to do that?" he smiled.

I rose up slightly and pulled the shirt over my head.

"How's that baby?" I smirked as he stared at me.

"I think that is evil" he smiled.

"No you letting me get cold is evil," I laughed.

"Well let's see what I can do about that" he smirked before he yanked the covers over our heads. He kissed me passionately, our tongues tangling around

Single Mom

each other. He made his way down my jawbone to my collarbone, his tongue licking lightly at my skin. His hands were everywhere.

He continued the same assault for a few more minuets until he elicited a very passionate moan from me. He then made his way to my breast. He took my erect nipple in his mouth and lightly sucked while his hand massaged my other breast.

"You are such a tease" I managed to get out.

He laughed, and continued his assault by switching breast.

"Please..." I moaned.

"Please what baby?" he smiled up at me.

"I want...no I need you...Please baby," I said through labored breathing.

He kissed his way down my stomach and stopped at my pant line.

"I can handle that," he said kissing my hip as he slipped my panties off. I watched him as he shed his boxers and kissed his way back up my leg, my thigh, my hip, my stomach, my breast stopping and licking slightly.

"I want you so bad," he whispered against my collarbone.

"Take me then" I said pulling his lips to mine.

No more words were spoken as I hitched my leg over his hip. He slid into me in one slow thrust. His lips never left mine as my back arched from feeling him inside me.

Our pace was slow and sensual. Every where our body's touched left a tingling sensation like never before.

Single Mom

"I love you," I said kissing him again as I felt myself on the verge of my release.

"I love you," he moaned as he thrust into me and burying his head in my hair.

I felt my walls contract around him as he kissed and nuzzled my neck.

"God Bella" he moaned, as he trusted into me. My walls clamped down as I released around him causing him to release.

He rolled over pulling me on top of him never pulling out of me.

"God you are amazing," he said kissing me breathlessly.

"So are you" I smiled and kissed his chest.

I never wanted to leave his arms.

"We better get some sleep love, we have a long day tomorrow," he said kissing. I kissed him one more time and rolled off him. I snuggled into his side and fell asleep.

**Well thiere ya go answers and a lemon just for you guys that asked lol.
Now go take the Poll after you review lol**

Amy bee

Chapter 19

VERY IMPORTANT NOTE!

Hey Everyone! Just want to remind you There is a POLL on my profile for you to vote for a sequel.

I have also added pictures for this chapter to it as well.

This story is coming to a close in a chapter or two. We had a time jump. Now I have the Sequel already in my head. So go vote yes hehehe Most are voting Yes.

Also I Have a New story! It is called Misleading Life.

OOC Adult Content. Norm Pairings. Courtney Johnson isn't who she says she is. What happens when her new life unravels? It's a fight to get her life back. Edward & Emmett are US Marshall's. Can they help her stop running? Can she live a normal life again? Is love part of her new found freedom?

I really like this story and Hope to see you guys their!

Now this story will not affect Single Mom or its Sequel. The sequel will and ML will be wrote at the same time. I just wanted to let you guys know that we are almost to the end now and voting will end soon. I have had a great time writing this and hope to continue with a sequel. :D

I know Long note right! Well thanks Scarletappy for double checking me and keeping me in line. oww and she helped me pick out the dresses! (you have to vote for sequel cause I have awesome stuff in mind.

So i love you guys Review and Enjoy!

Single Mom

Ch. 19

Christmas Preparation's

BPOV

To say I was nervous was the understatement of the year. Why I was so nervous I wasn't really sure. Edward and I had been doing amazing. The girls were amazing. Everything in my life was beautiful these days.

I loved my job. I was no longer working in the regular physical therapy department. I was the assistant in the pediatric department. The head therapist had picked up on how well I was with teenagers. I was given the opportunity to help in pediatrics about two months ago. I was offered the position at the end of that day. It was my dream job in all aspects. I got to play all day while helping a child. Therapy was one huge game when you were in Pediatrics.

Edward and I have been together six months today. We usually spent our afternoons with girls. Today was different. We were going Christmas shopping. We had about a week left until Christmas. We had shopped sporadically through out the month, but decided to finish up today.

As I finished getting dressed, I couldn't help but think of Edwards's behavior the past few weeks. He was definitely up to something. He was late three times last week and seemed to be running around like a chicken with its head cut off. Ok well more like Alice, which was scary. If I asked what was up I got grilled. "Who told you something?" "What do you know?" he would glare. I playfully smacked him several times over his strange behavior.

I was pulled out of my thinking by Edward himself.

"Are you ready beautiful?" he smiled from my doorway.

"Just finishing up. When did you get here?" I asked finishing up my mascara before walking over to kiss him.

"Just got here." he smiled and wrapped his arms around me.

Single Mom

"Well we better get going" I laughed and tried to get past.

"One more kiss and we will" he said giving me that infamous crooked smile. I couldn't resist so I quickly pressed my lips to his. Before I realized it, our kiss had deepened and I was panting for breath.

"Now that is a hello kiss" he smirked.

I laughed and smacked his arm pulling him down the stairs with me.

Charlie was laughing and tickling Macie when we got to the bottom.

"Mom save me!" she squealed. Charlie just laughed and continued his tickle attack.

"I think you're on your own baby girl I am no match for officer Swan," I laughed.

He eventually let her up and we said our goodbyes.

Everywhere we went, it was chaotic. I guess the Friday before Christmas was a huge time to shop. We had made our way to a different toy store after finishing with the rest of our families. We were not gifting together.

"I had an idea," Edward said dragging me through the toy store.

"What's that?" I asked as we stopped in front of one of the aisle.

"Well I know we didn't share gifting and all but I think it would be really cool if we got the girls a gift together." he smiled.

Why would we do that? I mean they are together all the time but a gift would be stuck at one place.

"That wouldn't be fair," I decided.

Single Mom

"Why not?" he asked stubbornly.

"Well I mean one of them would have it at all times so I don't see how that would be fair." I shrugged.

"Well I say we do it! And it would be stationary. They could both use it anytime" he smiled.

"Ok Edward what exactly do you have in mind?" I said glaring at him suspiciously.

"Don't give me that look. I say we do this," he said giving me that damn crooked smile.

"Ok what is it?" I smiled.

"Ok You can't look though," he laughed,

"What!"

"Just until we are in front of it," he promised. So, he covered my eyes and led me through the store.

He uncovered my eyes in front of the swing set board.

"Um you want to get them a swing set?" I asked confused.

"Promise not to get mad or over react?" he said with a guilty look.

"What have you done?" I said with a pointed look.

"Well I actually already bought them one!" he said laying on the charm.

"What?" I said shocked.

"Hey you can't get mad," he said hiding behind a teddy bear with a pout.

Single Mom

"Which one?" What the hell. How would they both play with it?

"This one!" he said happily pointing to the largest one. It was the Lexington Wood Gym.

We were in the middle of Toys R Us so I couldn't over react. It was pretty cool I had to admit. It had over sixty-five feet of covered play area, four levels of excitement. . A captain's wheel with easy climb ladder leading up to the mid-level clubhouse that had two windows. It had a telescope, flowerboxes, and a rock wall that led to the mid-level. A penthouse on the top that had a seventeen-foot twisty slide. It was amazing really.

"I think you spent way too much money! It is cool but they will get lost in that thing!" I said.

"Look I love it. Emmet can even fit! It's like a club house and everything! We will put it at Esme's so they can play with it all the time." He smiled. He had clearly figured this all out and planned on getting it with or without my approval.

"What ever!" I shrugged. I would get them something equally amusing to play indoors with.

"Just like that? It's that easy?" he asked clearly shocked I had accepted it.

"Well I decided since you are giving that from US, I would pick out something from US" I smiled.

"Oh, well what?"

"I had something in mind" I smiled and led him to the aisle I needed before grabbing a buggy. I stopped in front of the easy back oven and started putting it and accessories in.

"Really?" he smirked.

Single Mom

"Yep" I smirked right back. He just stood there and watched. I had aprons for both and all sorts of goodies.

"Ok" he smiled.

We finished up our shopping and went to his house to take care of wrapping. Charlie and Macie met us at Esme for dinner. Charlie had become part of the family as well. Esme had decided that everyone was having Christmas at their house. She didn't want anyone running all over the place on Christmas. So, she was opening up her home to my mother and Phil and the Hales.

We were going to help Esme finish up everything this weekend so she had decided to cook for us all. We were all hanging out in the living room watching Jace roll in Alice's huge stomach when Rose came running in.

"They are here!" she squealed.

"What is here?" Alice and I said at the same time. Alice had been rather calm here lately.

"The wedding pictures!" Rose said jumping up and down.

"Ok get your ass over here, I want to see!" Alice laughed not even moving.

We then all piled around Alice Rose and Emmett to see the wedding pictures. They had gotten married two months ago in the backyard. It was absolutely perfect for them. The wedding was completely fall themed. Everything was traditional. Her dress was beautiful. It was an empire princess style. It had beaded tulle and organza layers that fell into a gorgeous back sweep train. It was Ivory and silver.

Rose had included me as a bridesmaid since we had all three become so close. I wore a deep red knee-length a-line dresses. It had a black belt around the waist with a silver rhinestone buckle.

Single Mom

Alice wore a knee-length Red satin ruched empire waist dress. She had looked absolutely glowing. The dress was specially altered to fit her and her baby bump.

"So what do you think?" Rose finally asked.

"They look great!" everyone said at the same time.

"Well great" she bounced.

Even with the holidays, Edwards and I were growing closer and closer together. It wasn't unusually for us all to be at Esme and Carlisle's. Charlie was even a regular at least once a week.

We all heard a knock at the door. We all looked around the room at each other. We were all here no one else was supposed to be coming.

"I'll get it! Everyone go get ready to eat" Esme laughed and bounced out of the room. Alice was calm but Rose and Esme had seemed to take up her bouncing.

As ordered we took our usual places at the table. Rose, Emmett, Edward and I on one side, Alice, Jasper, and Charlie on the other. Esme and Carlisle always had the heads of the table. The girls had their own table that no grown ups were allowed at.

We were all laughing and cutting up as usual when Esme came in with a woman.

"Everyone this is Sue Clearwater" Esme said smiling brightly.

We all smiled and waved. I had heard of Sue but had never actually met her. She was Leah and Seth's mother. We were all friends but were never that close.

Esme introduced us all and smiled her brightest smile when it came to Charlie. He blushed and took her hand of course. I knew what she was up to at once!

Single Mom

"I think your mother is playing match maker," I whispered to Edward while everyone chattered away.

"Me to" he laughed.

Dinner went off without a hitch. Sue of course sat beside Charlie. Before we were half way through, they were talking and laughing. She was a beautiful woman. She had tan skin and long black hair with beautiful high cheekbones. Charlie seemed completely taken with her.

Esme's excuse of course was to have Sue help with all the holiday planning. Her husband had passed away a few years ago so it was just her, Seth, and Leah. Esme had invited them for Christmas as well. Edward and I though she was giving Sue as a Christmas present for Charlie.

I finally had a moment alone with Esme in the kitchen. Alice and Rose were with Sue in the dinning room going over recipes.

"So is Sue your Christmas present to Charlie?" I asked as she was getting the coffee ready.

She froze and turned with a smile.

"I would never do such a thing" she smiled.

"Yah you have definitely been hanging around Alice to long" I laughed. She was laughing to.

"Well are you opposed to it?" she asked with a look of hope.

"No he needs someone. So you and Alice and Rose have my blessing in playing matchmaker." I winked.

"Oh good! But I hope we don't have to play anymore. Sue is a great woman" She said happily.

Single Mom

"Yes I have heard a lot about her. I can see she will take good care of him." I smiled and helped her out with the coffee and cookies.

We had planned out the meals for Christmas Eve and Day by the end of the night. The girls were passed out in Emily's room. They had been watching Christmas movies all night so I decided against waking her. Charlie had drove Sue home since Seth had dropped her off earlier. Jasper had to carry a sleeping Alice upstairs. Rose and Emmet were also staying since the roads were slick.

Alice had been doing well with the pregnancy since her fainting spell. She would get light headed every now and then but learned quickly what her limits were. It wasn't UN common for Jasper and her to stay over.

Edward and I curled up in bed. Me in his t-shirt with his arm draped over me. This was my favorite place to be. We would get up in the morning and walk back to his parents. That was if the girls didn't ride one of the many riding toys down the path and attack us.

Edward quickly fell asleep and I couldn't help but smile. His head was on my shoulder and our legs were tangled together. I had my arm under him and his arm was draped over me.

I couldn't help but think how lucky I was. I had finally decided to let things go. We were happy. Neither of us were fighting against a relationship and we found a peace between us. The girls were blissfully happy. They had their moments like all girls but adored each other. Our family's blended so well that they were all one huge family.

I drifted off peacefully after kissing his cheek. This was going to be an awesome Christmas was my last thought.

Well? Don't forget to Review and Vote! Once again i have pictures up for this chapter already!and check out Misleading Life heheh i know shameless right.

xoxo

Amy Bee

Chapter 20

Well the results are in. You asked for it you get it! Yes won the Poll! So we are almost to the end of this part. I worked on this chapter last night for a long time and finished up this morning. Scarletappy caught my mistakes so thank her! lol She really is awesome.

Misleading Life is still going. I will be updating it later on this weekend. I have been focusing on this story more since we are almost at the end.

Enjoy and review! Lol i love reviews

Single Mom

Ch.20

Mistletoe

BPOV

The countdown to Christmas was getting intense. Work was slow with patients rescheduling and planning for trips with families, so I had the week off since we had no patients. The girl's were bouncing off of every wall it seemed. Esme, Sue, Rose, and I were staying busy getting everything together. Alice of course was taking it easy overseeing everything from a comfortable perch. This happened to be were ever Jasper or someone else set her up with her feet propped up. She had insisted on tasting everything. We of course indulged the pregnant pixie and had a blast with it all.

It was two days before Christmas Eve now. Renee and Phil were driving up tomorrow. Emmett and Rose were picking up her parents at the airport this afternoon. Esme was running around making sure the guest bedrooms were all taken care of. I of course was helping her and tending to the demanding pixie. She was in a mood today, everything had to be perfect. She was feeling down about having to take it easy. We had decided to let her help a little but had to

Single Mom

sit most of the time since her feet were so swollen.

"Esme I really appreciate you doing this." I smiled as we passed each other on the stairs. We had not slowed down since after breakfast.

"It is nothing sweetie" she smiled happily. She was truly in her element tending to everyone. Huge gatherings were her thing.

"Well I still really appreciate it. I know Edward and I have only been seeing each other for six months." I said blushing.

"Well it has been a great six months. I couldn't imagine not having you and Macie here. Besides Charlie, Macie, and you are like family now. I know Renee and Phil will be to." She smiled and hugged me.

"Thanks" I said hugging her back.

We went our separate ways. I heard Alice calling me as soon as I hit the bottom step.

"BELLA!"

"I am coming Alice" I laughed and found her in the living room.

"About time you showed up!" she smiled.

"I was with Esme what's up?" I shrugged knowing it was going to be some oddball task.

"Well it isn't the mistletoe!" she laughed.

"Mistletoe?" I questioned.

"Um yah it wouldn't be Christmas without it! I need your help though" she smiled. I swear if she didn't think she would topple over she would be bouncing. It would be a site to see I'm sure.

Single Mom

"What now" I laughed.

"Well I cannot find any of the guys. I swear they are ignoring me! But if you go track them down they will have to come" she giggled.

"So basically you want me to do your dirty work?" I laughed.

"Yah basically I mean I would but have you seen me walk lately?" she smiled her little demon pixie she smiles when she is determined to get her way. I could toy with her but we both knew she would get what she wanted. So I would settle for poking fun at her waddle.

"Well actually I saw you waddling in that black and white outfit you have and I swore it was a penguin!" I laughed.

I had to duck because I had slippers and fashion magazines being thrown at my head. I ran out of the room as quickly as I could to find the guys.

"You guys better be down here!" I yelled from the top of the basement stairs.

"No Women" I heard Emmett yell and laugh, followed by a smack. It was most likely from Edward. I smiled at the thought of him smacking his brother for me as I walked down the stairs.

There sat Emmett, Jasper, Carlisle, Charlie, and Edward each with a beer in hand.

"Ok something is seriously wrong with this picture" I glared at all five of them.

"Does Alice know I am down here" Jasper shirked. He sounded like a girl a little.

"Kill the girly sounds Jasper" I laughed.

"Have you seen her lately? I mean the mood swings are killer today!" he said flopping back down in his chair.

Single Mom

"Actually I have, I just got ran out of the living room. By flying magazines and slippers. There may have been a nail file involved but I ran to quick to find out." I laughed and plopped down in Edwards lap and taking his beer. That would teach him to leave me alone with the crazy pregnant pixie next time. I smiled and kissed his cheek after a long sip.

"That's good beer," I laughed. Charlie was laughing so hard I think he was about to fall out of his chair.

"I deserve that" he smiled. At least he knew when not to argue.

"Ok so what sends you to the man cave Bell's" Emmett laughed.

"Well apparently you guys are hard of hearing. Alice has been looking for all of you for the past hour. I was sent to do the dirty work" I smiled.

"Ok so why were you running from flying objects?" Carlisle smiled.

"Well there may have been a comment involving a black and white outfit, waddling and a penguin" I shrugged and laughed. The guys were hysterical at this.

"Wait let me get this right. You, Bella Swan called my very pregnant, crazy sister a penguin?" Emmett laughed.

"Yah that would be me. I was just playing. It was to get even with her running me ragged today. But if I were you guy's I would be getting my ass up those stairs as fast I could and be asking were the mistletoe is going" I laughed.

"ON MY WAY HONEY!" Jasper Screamed as loud as he could ringing all of our ears. You could hear Alice laughing. He was up those stairs at her beck and call quicker than you could blink.

"THE REST OF YOU!" She screamed.

"Told you so" I laughed and let Edward up.

Single Mom

Everyone but Edward went up as quick as they could without knocking each other over.

"Well straggler I think you are going to get in trouble" I said putting on my best coy smile.

"Well I would rather get in trouble than miss a kiss from you. You did take flying objects for us," he laughed.

"Well actually those were really only aimed at me" I laughed as he pulled me into his arms.

"EDWARD ANTHONY CULLEN GET UP HERE NOW!"

"Damn" he mumbled and shook his head.

"Told you trouble maker" I laughed and kissed him quickly. We would all pay if he didn't get his ass moving up those stairs.

I guess we are both trouble makers then" he laughed pulling me up the stairs.

I came up the stairs with Edward's beer in hand. Alice glared at me and I just raised the beer and winked. Of course that got the candle she had in her hand thrown at my head.

Alice forgave me the moment I brought her the bag of Oreos we kept for emergencies like this. Esme, Sue, Rose and I were drinking a glass of wine while Alice ate her Oreos. The men were stuck hanging mistletoe all over the house. Alice had enough for every house in Forks.

Emmett and Rose were finally allowed to leave to pick up her parents. They were her in-law's is what she had said. Carlisle had offered to sedate her, of course he was joking. We had all thought about it seriously for a moment before we laughed. He earned a slipper aimed at his head.

Single Mom

I ducked behind the couch when the slipper went flying. I had already been through round one.

"Damn Alice, you would think you had better aim than that today!" I yelled from behind the couch before I fell over laughing. Carlisle was on the floor laughing to.

"Well isn't this lovely" Mrs. Hale said from behind us about the time the other slipper and a few magazines came flying our way.

"Oh My God! Look what you two made me do!" Alice squealed.

"I warned you mom," Rose said snickering.

"I see" she laughed and headed for the kitchen. Emmett was trying his best not to hit the floor laughing. Mr. Hale was standing beside him trying to hold his composure as well.

"Come on Bob" Carlisle laughed and lead him towards the kitchen.

"Ok stuff has really got to stop flying through the air Alice" I glared.

"Well you guys should stop making fun of me!" she huffed.

"We are not making fun of you! It is just too funny how you act at times. Besides Bella is clumsy enough on her own," Edward laughed. Alice saw me pick up the slipper she had just thrown at me and smiled. He never saw it coming. I launched it at his head and hit my target.

"Oh Shit!" He yelled.

"LANGUAGE!" Esme yelled from the kitchen.

"FLYING OBJECTS" he yelled back.

"ALICE NO MORE THROWING!"

Single Mom

"I DIDN'T DO IT! BELLA DID" she laughed. We were all in hysterics by this point. Everyone was really. The Hales, Sue, Charlie, Esme and Carlisle were all laughing in the doorway.

"You guys are too loud!" Emily ordered with her hand on her hip half way down the stairs.

"You guys should really behave!" Macie said right beside her. This of course caused another round of laughter. The girls simply rolled their eyes, stomped up the stairs and slammed the door.

"You know we should really take example from our kids," I laughed at Edward.

"Yah that would probably be smart" he said laughing still.

"Jeez" Alice said patting her stomach and laughed.

"Huh I am right here!" Jasper snapped up immediately stopping his laughing fit. We all died laughing again.

"Am I really that bad?" Alice said as we all calmed down.

"At times, your poor husband is a little on edge" Esme smiled.

The conversation ended and everyone went back to relaxing finally. After dinner, Edward and I joined the girls to watch *A Charlie brown Christmas*. They fell asleep halfway through of course. But Edward and I finished the movie before making our way to his room. He of course stopped under every piece of mistletoe to kiss me, all night. It was really sweet.

We got up early the next morning and took the girls to breakfast. It was nice just to be us four on such a busy day. It was the day before Christmas Eve. The girls had asked if we could help them pick out something special for Renee, Phil, Charlie, Carlisle and Esme. So after breakfast we went to the mall.

Single Mom

"Should we get Jace a present to his grandparents?" Emily asked when we passed a baby store.

"That would be really sweet Emily," Edward said pulling her into a hug. The whole idea was so sweet.

"Can I help pick it out? Macie asked.

"Well duh silly! He will be like your cousin to!" Emily laughed as she took Macie's hand and they jumped up and down. Edward and I were both left a little speechless. My jaw was probably hanging open a little.

The girls quickly pulled us out of our dumbfounded state and dragged us through the mall. Finally, after we had gotten all the presents they wanted to get we got out of there. We took them for pizza before we made it back to the Cullen house. Renee and Phil were there when we got back.

"Nana! Phil!" Macie screamed when she saw them. "I got you a present" she smiled happily.

"Oh really can we see?" my mom asked true to her nature.

"NO! You have to wait," she laughed before Emily and her head to put the presents under the tree.

"Hey" I laughed and hugged them both.

"Wow don't you look great!" my mom said looking me up and down.

"Thanks, Alice got a hold of me this morning," I laughed.

"Ah, yes she is in a very good mood today. She said to tell you no flying objects today." Renee said. She was slightly confused until we told her all about the previous day. Edward greeted them when he came in. They had met several months ago. They were crazy about him of course.

Single Mom

We were in the living room when all of our parents came in. Macie and Emily were with them.

"We decided we would tell you all that we were going out. Macie and Emily are going to." Esme smiled happily.

"Um ok"" Edward and I said at the same time.

"We have some things to pick up, we won't be out late. We are going to get dinner so you all will have to find your own," Renee laughed.

"Well listen here young man I expect my mother home at a descent hour!" Emmett play scolded Carlisle.

"We will bring them back" Macie and Emily laughed and dragged them out the door after they kissed us on the cheek and patted Alice's belly. Then they were gone.

"Well now what?" I asked Edward.

"I think we all got ditched" Rose laughed.

"Yah I don't think we are cool enough for them" jasper laughed.

"So did you see Charlie and Sue holding hands?" Alice squealed.

"Yes!" I laughed.

"I have to say this is one interesting Christmas." Edward laughed.

"That may be the understatement of the year" I said kissing his cheek.

We were all playing monopoly when they came back. Simple handholding was no more with Charlie and Sue. His arm was around her and he had her pulled close. Everyone was smiling and laughing when they found us in the living room. Carlisle and Phil were loaded down with more presents.

Single Mom

"More presents?" Edward asked.

"Yah well these are from the girls" Esme laughed.

"What?" I asked a little shocked. They had gotten gifts yesterday.

"Yap!" they laughed and ran up the stairs. Those two were inseparable.

As the thought hit me, I realized how much it would hurt them if something were to happen now. They would be devastated. What would we do?

"Are you ok Bella?" Edward asked.

"Yah was just thinking about the girls." I shrugged.

"What about them" everyone said at the same time.

"Well, you guy's see them. They are best friends! What happens if Edward and I stop seeing each other?" I said low with a blush. I hated to think about that. But it was something we needed to consider.

"I think we should give Edward a moment alone," Bob said smiling at us. Jasper was so much like his father. Everyone filed out of the room and followed Esme to the kitchen.

"So you are worried about this?" he asked when we were alone.

"Yes, it is something we should think about. They would be devastated." I sighed.

"I see your point," he said scooping me up out of the floor to sit beside him on the couch.

"So what should we do?" I asked. We had never discussed this. Why, I have no clue?

"Well we make two deals right now," he said with his brow furrowed.

Single Mom

"What's that?"

"Well one me and you don't let it happen. I mean we would have to make sure we stay happy. Two if something should happen and we fail at number one, they stay best friends and play together all the time. I mean I would be upset myself if I didn't get to see Macie" he said kissing me softly. That was the sweetest thing any man had ever said to me. I felt tears in my eyes.

"Sounds good, I would be upset if I didn't get to see Emily," I said kissing him back. This time our kiss turned more passionate. As his tongue slid across my bottom lip, I let him in. Our tongues caressed each other softly. It was meaningful, loving and passionate all at once.

We stayed like that for a little while before joining our family in the kitchen. We drank hot coco and ate cookies with the girls before bed. We stayed in the main house because the girls did. We could have stayed at Edwards but the girls didn't want to leave. So we indulged of course, Christmas Eve was tomorrow. They wanted to be with everyone.

That night Edward and I tried to consummate our deal. My shirt was about to slip off when Emily came in. She had a bad dream so she curled up in bed with us. I was just drifting off when Macie came in. She had a bad dream to. I silently cursed Emmett for watching that creepy *Nightmare Before Christmas* movie. Edward just smiled and we drifted off to sleep. Edward and I on the outside, while the girls were in the middle. Emily was curled up to me while Macie was curled up to Edward.

Well? once again we find each other at the end haha.

I hope you like it My neice and my daughter were distracting me haha.

Don't forget to Review! it makes me so happy!

Chapter 21

Hey everyone! Well here is another chapter!

I do not own anything twilight related or anything I obviously don't lol

I hope you enjoy. We have maybe one or two more chapters and maybe and epilogue left.

I have been asked about what was going to happen to Tanya. Well i will clear that up before we close.

Now there are new pictures up on my profile for this chapter already :D

See ya at the bottom!

Happy Early Turkey Day!

Ch. 21

Single Mom

Christmas Eve

EPOV

I woke up to Macie's head on my chest and her lightly snoring. I couldn't help but smile. She looked so much like her mother. I raised my head slightly and my smile grew bigger if that was possible. Emily was tucked into Bella's side and Bella's arm draped over her small frame.

This was what made life worth it all. The past six months had been the best of my life. The girls took to us being together before we had. I had expected the worst with Emily. It had always been just us. She had not even had to share me with her mother. I was always Emily's no one else's. But Bella and Macie had

Single Mom

changed all of that.

Emily had confided that she wanted Macie as her sister a few weeks ago. She took after her aunt more than she knew. Alice had said the same thing two days after about Bella. My whole family was on the same page when it came to them. I was reminded every day for months how much they loved the two of them.

The truth was I didn't need their reminders. Bella and the girls was all I thought about. Waking up to this site made me fall in love even more. I just wanted the four of us nothing else.

I slipped out from Macie's grasp slowly and carefully to not to wake her. After a quick shower I through on some jeans and the t shirt the girls had gotten me the other day. It was the little green drummer guy from the Muppets wearing a Santa hat and jamming out on his drums. I loved my shirt.

I made my way downstairs to find my mother already starting breakfast. So I snuck up behind her and hugged her. She jumped and laughed when she realized what was going on.

"Good morning" she smiled flipping the blueberry pancake.

"Good morning" I laughed and poured myself a cup of coffee.

"Where are all three of your girls" she winked.

"Still sleeping. Emily and Macie spent the night in my room" I laughed.

"I figured as much when I checked their room." She had been referring to it as "their room" for awhile now. I couldn't help but smile.

"I was going to make breakfast but you beat me to it. Do you need any help" I asked fixing her another cup of coffee.

Single Mom

"Actually the only thing I need you to do is wake everyone up" she smiled happily. This had always been my job on the holidays.

"No problem. I am going to start with the girls so they can attack Emmett" I laughed. I had used the pan and spoon beside his head last year so I needed something new anyway.

Esme was laughing as I ran out of the room. This was the best part of Christmas Eve while I was growing up. Torturing Emmett. I would wake Alice nicely this year since she was psychotically pregnant.

I knocked on Alice's door and smiled when she opened it immediately.

"Morning Edward! I was awake before you got here this year" she smiled.

"Yah well I was going to be nice. Besides I am going to get the girls up first and then we are getting Emmett up. I thought you might want to watch" I laughed as I headed up to my room. I stopped and silently woke Rose up. I didn't want to get murdered this morning. I definitely would if she got woke up like Emmett was going to. She smiled and went to grab coffee.

I snuck in the room and kissed each one of my girls on the forehead before I started bouncing on the bed like a two year old. Each one grumbled and rolled. Finally after about ten bounces they opened there eyes. Bella was the only one smiling as I jumped up and down.

"Emily I think your daddy has lost his mind" she laughed. Emily grumbled and hid her head. Macie started to smile slowly as I bounced her in the air another time.

"Your silly Edward" she finally laughed.

"Ok I have smiles out of Bella and Macie but what about you Emily!" I laughed bouncing again.

"Daddy no!" she huffed.

Single Mom

"Well what if I give you and Macie both water guns and you two can go wake Uncle Emmett up for me!"

"Ok!" She said shooting up out of the bed. Bella was laughing hysterically as both the girls started jumping with me.

"What do I get to do?" She laughed.

"You get to watch and protect me from Emmett, then you can have homemade blueberry pancakes" I said as I stopped jumping and sat beside her. I kissed her softly on the lips. We were separated by a choir of "EWWWS".

Ten minutes later everyone in the house was standing outside Emmett's room.

"Ok girls, remember what I told you?" I whispered as I handed over the water guns I had filled with ice water from the fridge.

"Bounce on the bed and spray Uncle Emmett" Emily nodded. Macie smiled and I opened the door.

They ran in and started jumping on the bed and spraying him. They were screaming "WAKE UP UNCLE EMMETT" as loud as they could. Everyone in the hall was dying laughing as Emmett started squealing and trying to get under the covers.

"IM GOING TO GET YOU EDWARD" He screamed and made his way out of the bed towards us.

I quickly pulled Bella in front of me and pulled us behind mom and dad.

"OH no you are not using us" my parents laughed and jumped out of the way.

Bella was laughing as I pulled her through the hall. I kissed her cheek as I went under a piece of mistletoe and laughed.

Single Mom

Emmett was grumbling and running through the hall after us. He had managed to get the water guns from the girls.

"I suggest you move Bella" he smiled wickedly at us.

"I CAN'T! He has a death grip on me!" she laughed.

"Chicken shit" he laughed.

"Am not!" I retorted.

"Sorry Bell's you know I love yah right?" he asked as he backed us in the corner. She just laughed more and nodded.

"Emmett don't you dare! Bella is not in this!" I laughed.

"You brought her into it, she is just a victim" he laughed and opened fire soaking us with the guns.

I really should have given them kid water guns. We were completely soaked with Emmett at the trigger. Emily had the Sniper Water Rifle while Macie had been sporting the Flashflood Water Gun. So Bella looked like she had just taken a shower. I lucked out and my shirt was still dry.

BPOV

I should have been mad at Edward for hiding behind me. But I couldn't be. It was hilarious to see big strong Emmett squeal like a girl. I loved Emmett to death but it was still worth it.

After he had run out of water Edward and I chased him out of the hall. Edward slipped on dry jeans while I had to put a whole new outfit on.

"I will get you back later" I winked and went to join the family for breakfast. He was still laughing when he came downstairs.

Single Mom

"Hey it was all worth it" he laughed and kissed me. The doorbell rang separating us. We could not catch a single moment alone lately!

"I will get it go get some coffee" he said laughing at my groin.

I gladly left him to get the door. I made my way to the dinning room and joined everyone. Emmett was smiling and laughing with Emily and Macie both in his lap as they stuffed pancake in his mouth. I had just sat down and was laughing with Rose over them when Charlie and Sue came in with Edward.

The rest of the day had been spent cooking and torturing one another. Alice had even pulled her fair share of pranks. I was constantly swatting Emmett or Edward out of something in the kitchen or keeping them from sneaking stuff out to Alice.

We finally made it through Christmas Eve dinner. Everything had turned out perfect. Well except Emmett's Pumpkin Pie. He had sworn it was going to be so easy. Two hours later he was finally done. He had even used can pie filling. So we have yet to figure out were he went wrong. Why he wanted pumpkin pie at Christmas we will never know. He decided to make a little face on his disaster to make it funnier.

We were still laughing when we all gathered in the living room. Everyone got to open one gift tonight, the rest had to wait till after Santa Clause.

"So which presents are we opening?" Emmett bounced in the floor next to Macie and Emily.

"I don't know. Which ones should we do?" Esme asked.

"Let's do the one's we got!" Emily said jumping up.

"Yah! I want to give Emmett his!" Macie laughed as Emily pulled her up.

"Ok" everyone laughed. They had solved the problem.

Single Mom

A few minutes later the girls were done passing out there gifts. I had no clue how they had gotten one for everyone. All the tags said who they were to from Em and Moo. I smiled when I saw the tag.

"Ok Emmett goes first!" Macie said bouncing in front of him. His box was huge. Carlisle had to give it to him.

He tore the paper off just like a kid and opened the plain brown box.

"HOLY CRAP!" he yelled pulling a big Jeep with huge tires out of the box. The girls laughed and jumped up and down happily.

"Do you like it?" they asked at the same time laughing at each other.

"Do I like it? I love it!" he said putting the Jeep down and picking them both up and twirling them around. Everyone was laughing. He was as much a kid as they were.

They demanded Carlisle, Esme, Renee, Phil, and Charlie to open there's next. But they had to do it at the same time according to Alice. Edward and I just stared at each other. These were not the gifts we had gotten with them.

They each unwrapped their presents. They all had three picture frames. One was of Macie, one of Emily and one of them both. They each got a hug and kiss from them all. Esme and Renee of course cried as usual. Alice just snickered in the corner, revealing who was behind the present.

Sue was given a basket of homemade candy the girls had made with Esme earlier in the week. It was filled with all different kinds and a gift card for a day at the spa. Esme was beaming proudly.

Alice and Rose were next. Each opened a collector Barbie. Alice had the beautiful Southern Bell and Rose had the elegant Singing in the Spotlight Barbie. They were both gushing over their collector dolls as Jasper chuckled and winked.

Single Mom

"Esme I know we only said one but you have to open this one now" Macie smiled handing Esme a box.

"Why now?" she asked curious.

"Because!" Jasper said urgently and smiled making everyone laugh.

She did and revealed another Barbie. Hers was a Jonathon Adler collector. He was some big interior designer or something. Esme as ecstatic to say the least and joined Rose and Alice to show of her Barbie. Jasper had given himself away.

Carlisle then brought Jasper his box. His was bigger than Emmett's though. Emmett gawked and the girls giggled. Jasper opened the paper calmly and flipped open the giant box.

"YES!" He yelled happily pulling out a baseball bat, a bag of baseball's, a glove and bases. He grabbed the girls up in a big hug and kissed there cheeks. I looked around the room to see who had done this one. I couldn't see anyone giving there self's away. That was until Macie walked by Rose and they gave each other a sly five. I winked at Rose when she looked up and she just shrugged and smiled.

Finally it was our turn. Macie and Emily bounced over and sat on our laps.

"Well were is my box?" Edward laughed and pocked Emily in the stomach.

"You don't get a box" she laughed.

"What! I get left out!"

"No you will see" she laughed as Emmett disappeared.

"Well what about me?" I asked.

"Nope" Macie giggled.

Single Mom

"Well I think we got cheated!" I played.

"Macie...Emily!" Emmett called from the basement door.

"Coming" they yelled and took off,

"Does anyone know what is going on?" I asked.

Everyone just shook there head no and Rose snickered.

"Ok Rose, what's going on?" Edward glared.

"You will see" she smiled.

"What is he up to?" he demanded.

"Oh don't blame me. This was all their idea!" she laughed.

We heard Macie, Emmett and Emily giggle from the hall. Macie peaked around the corner to make sure we hadn't moved and pulled her head back. They were whispering about something. Then we heard it.

Clink clink clink clink...clink clink...

Macie and Emily ran into the room smiling and sat down in the middle of the floor. Then the noise came faster.

Clink clink clink clink

In walked in the two most adorable Beagle puppies. Each had a huge bow tied to its collar. One green and one red. The girls led them over to us. Each one had a tag hanging from their bow.

I reached over and picked up the puppy with the red bow. Edward picked the one with the green up.

Single Mom

"Well?" Macie smiled hopeful.

"Yah! Come on say something!" Emily pleaded.

"Puppies?" I asked shocked.

"Yap" Emmett smiled. He was now standing from behind Alice's chair. She laughed when she saw looked up and saw him.

"Hiding behind the pregnant woman?" she laughed.

"Yah I figured they wouldn't hurt you" he laughed and dodged the smack on the arm.

"They are adorable" I smiled at Edward.

"But two?" he said shocked.

"Well I think the goal was one for each" I laughed.

They were both brown, white and black. Mine had more brown on her face and looked like she was wearing black glasses. Her legs were brown with white feet. Edwards had mostly brown and whit on its face and white legs. His was a boy and mine was a girl.

"Well...Um...yah...I guess...They are pretty cute" he stuttered at first but then smiled.

"You like them?" Emily squealed making the puppy I was holding hide its face.

"Yes now what are their names?" I laughed.

Yes I left that open hehe. Everything is fun right now for them. Thiere will be no more drama for them really. They celebrate Christmas day next! all of the presents from the girls except the photographys, gift cards, baseball

Single Mom

gear and candy basket are on profile. The water guns are there to. As you can see the girls had help with all of these. But th rest of the gifts come out next. What are Bella and Edwards to each other? lol

I love your reviews so show some love! I will write quicker. Happy Thanksgiving Everyone if I don't post before then. Things are kind of crazy with my family lol

REVIEW PRETTY PLEASE!

LOVE YA"S

Amy Bee

Chapter 22

Hey everyone I am sorry it has been a little while since I updated. Life has been hectic. Plus I am getting sick. I wanted to post this so you wouldn't have to wait any longer then I am going to bed.

This is the last official chapter. The epilogue will be up soon. I know how it plays out so don't worry.

Does anyone have any ideas for a title for the sequel? Let me know what you would like to know in the epilogue or in the sequel. I will try to work everything in.

Thank you all so much for sticking with me. Thank you Amber for all the love lol Night Orchid U ROCK MY SOCKS BABE! Scarletappy for taking over all my editing and helping me with ideas and names and omg the list goes on. I have made some great friends with this story and I wouldn't trade you all for anything haha.

There will be more thanks. If you are looking for some great stories check out my faves Bare is awesome so is Age of Consent: My summer as a legal intern. Ya check those out they are in my faves.

I will let you all read and review now don't forget to leave me your ideas and thoughts.

Huggs

P.S I don't own twilight or tiffanys or any of that good stuff I do own macie, this plot, a awesome cell phone and half a coke and some cold medicine hehe

Single Mom

Ch. 22

Santa Clause is Coming to Town

BPOV

After the girls were tucked in and asleep, the rest of us played Santa. Emmett, Jasper, Carlisle, Charlie, Mr. Hale, and Edward had finished putting the Swing Set together that afternoon. They were very sly about the whole thing since the girls were running around the house. Rose and Esme had kept them busy.

After "Santa" had visited, we snuck into bed. Mr. Darcy rudely awakened me. Apparently, he and Liz needed to go out, at five in the morning! Yes, our puppies were named Mr. Darcy and Elizabeth from *Pride and Prejudice*. We called them Darcy and Liz for Short or just D and Liz.

By the time, I was done with the dogs Esme was in the kitchen cooking. The dogs immediately ran up to her and started licking at her legs.

"Ok you two out of the kitchen" she laughed.

"Who usually does the waking up this morning Esme?" I smiled holding D and Liz.

"Well Edward usually tries to, or Alice. I think Emmett did it last year though. Why?"

"Well I was thinking me, Darcy, Liz, and you could do it," I giggled.

"What did you have in mind" she smiled happily.

"I want pay back for getting ambushed yesterday. I was thinking the dogs could wake up the girls, But I want Emmett and Edward." I laughed.

"Well I think we can handle this."

After ten minuets of preparing, we snuck up the stairs. It had snowed during the night, which made our plan simple. The dogs were following behind us.

Single Mom

Esme had a small cooler with snowballs and a pitcher of snow. I had the same. We let the dogs into the girl's room and snuck in to wake everyone but Emmett and Edward. Rose slipped out silently with a smile.

We heard the girls giggling and Rose snuck in to get them in the hall with out waking anyone. Esme was at Edwards door and I at Emmett's. Everyone was standing around waiting on us to attack.

On Alice's count, we opened the doors. We started our ambush with our pitcher of snow. The snowballs were hidden in a specific spot. You heard Em and Edward scream, the pitchers fall to the floor, Esme, and I running to our hiding place.

Just as we, suspected Edward and Emmett emerged at the same time with a few snowballs they managed to save. Everyone was laughing.

"Were are they?" Edward glared.

"Dude your on your own!" Jasper laughed.

We were hidden behind around the corner in the hall. We had a few decretive trees to hide behind. Emmett and Edward came around the corner and we opened fire.

"What the hell!" Emmett boomed.

"Language Emmett" Esme laughed as she hit him in the face with another snowball.

"MOM!" he shouted in shock.

I launched one, hit Edward upside the head, and busted out laughing as he tried to cover his face.

"BELLA!" he glared at our hiding spot.

Single Mom

"Oh get over it!" I laughed.

We launched the rest of our snowballs at there running figures and managed to hit them a few more times. Then we were out. The next thing we knew Edward had me and Emmett had me carrying us down the stares.

"Hey now Santa came!" Esme screamed between laughing.

"SANTA!" You hear the girls scream.

"Yah so make Edward and Emmett put us down!" I laugh out as they are heading down the stairs with us.

"PUT THEM DOWN" Emily demands. She has her arms across her chest and her hip thrown to the side. Alice Jr. right there!

"NOW" Macie adds with the same attitude.

Emmett and Edward laugh but do not sit us down until we get to the bottom of the steps.

The girls made sure Esme and I was put down and promptly ran to the living room. We all followed them in with Emmett and Edward's wet close. I mean who wants to miss Santa Clause right? It's a parent thing; you have to see your kid's reactions to the gifts. Emmett's excuse was that he was a kid himself and we all laughed.

Everyone had there camera's flashing as the girls walked in the living room. They immediately stopped in place and started jumping up and down and screaming. Edward just wrapped his arms around me and pulled me down on the couch with him.

"So do you think they are happy?" he whispered as we watched the girls pick through everything. They were trying on there aprons and looking over everything that went with the Easy Bake oven with Esme.

Single Mom

"Can you not tell?" I laughed.

"Yes I think they are...are you?" he smiled.

"Blissfully so. What about you?"

"More than you will ever know" he laughed and kissed my cheek.

"Ok so are we going to eat before presents?" Alice asked as she rubbed her baby bump.

"Yah what the pregnant woman said" Emmett laughed.

"Well I don't think the girls are through with Santa just yet. I see a note in the tree looks like it says Macie and Emily." Edward smiled.

Macie ran to the tree and grabbed the note. She brought it over to me with Emily hot on her heels.

"Ok" I laughed as they shoved it in my hands. The note was in Carlisle's lovely handwriting.

Dear Emily and Macie,

Shoes and jackets are needed to find your next present. You both have been such good girls I got you something BIG! Drag everyone with you and follow my clues. They might be sparkly Reindeer footprints. They worked very hard to help lead you to it. Start in the hall by the stairs.

Merry Christmas

Santa Clause

Edward and I knew what the present was of course, but we had no idea about the note or clues. Carlisle just winked as he came in with the girl's snow boots and jackets. Edward kissed my cheek and ran off to find ours. The girls were in

Single Mom

there boots and jacket jumping up and down by the stairs when everyone was ready. They had found the first print.

Besides the stairs the plain white index cards started. Each one had a stamp of a hoof with gold glitter. Esme just laughed when they found them. She shook her head when I looked to her telling me no. Sue had appeared and just smiled. Esme pointed to her and Karen Hale.

Thirty cards later, we were in the backyard. The girls were screaming and jumping up and down. Emmett and Jasper pushed them on the swing's before Emmett chased them all the way through the playhouse. We had to drag them away finally. We had stayed outside for over an hour. Esme had abandoned us to finish breakfast.

After a great breakfast we took our coffee and hot coco back to the living room. The tree was still full of presents. Rose handed the girls each a Santa hat and they ran to the tree. They wanted to hand out the presents.

EPOV

I had resigned myself to the fact my life was almost perfect as we all sat in the huge living room. The girls adored each other, my family adored them both and I couldn't see a future without Bella and Macie.

We watched and snapped pictures as the girls opened there presents first. Santa had brought them a bunch but my family had beat Santa on the number of gifts. Bella was blushing at the amount of gifts. She and Charlie had a ton of gifts at there feet just like everyone else. It was very possible Bella had more. She really had no idea how much everyone loved her.

It was finally time for all of us to open our presents from our parents. They of course wanted to wait until we had opened ours. We sat the rule that our gifts to our spouse's were the last to be opened in the pile of gifts.

We all laughed and talked as we opened our gifts to and from each other. Alice and Jasper got a lot of new parent gifts. Bella and I got them matching gifts.

Single Mom

Bella had gotten Alice a diaper bag. It was embroidered in elegant font with the initials J.A.H. The bag was cream colored with a chocolate and blue polka-dotted bow to match the nursery colors. I had gotten Jasper his own diaper bag. His was Chocolate with J.A.H embroidered in blue. He had said he didn't want to have to be stuck carrying some unmanly bag.

We were finally down to the gifts to each other. Our Parents were all opening their gifts. I handed Bella the small rectangular box.

"Edward!" she gasped. Even through the wrapping paper, you could tell it was a jewelry box.

"Just open it Love" I smiled and kissed her cheek. I watched as she opened it.

"Oh Edward! It's beautiful!" she gasped as she ran her fingers of the key locket. I had looked everywhere for the perfect locket. Tiffany's had what I wanted. It was a two-inch sterling silver heart key. I had the heart engraved with an ornate B. I was hoping she would say yes to my next gift but I wanted her to see the inside. Alice had helped me out on the contents.

"Open it" I smiled.

She flipped the locket open and smiled. She had tears forming in her eyes. On one side was a picture of Macie and Emily. It wasn't the same pictures everyone had gotten the night before but it was taken the same day. I had asked her to have one made for just Bella. They had there arms wrapped around each other and were cheek-to-cheek smiling like no tomorrow.

On the other was a picture of the two of us taken by us. We were lying in bed one morning when she snapped the picture. I was kissing her cheek and she had this amazing smile. Her hair was splayed out around us in soft curls. She was absolutely glowing.

The room was quite. Everyone was watching us. My arms were around her as she looked at the locket, tears in her eyes.

Single Mom

"Do you like it?" I whispered. I didn't care who was watching. Seeing her look at the locket with so much love in her eyes was amazing.

"I love it," she said wrapping her arms around my neck. I pulled her away, wiped her tears away, and kissed her softly on the lips. She laughed when she heard the girls giggle.

"Here open yours" she smiled and handed me a small box.

I unwrapped the little box and was shocked. She had gotten me a watch. It wasn't just any watch though; it was an Atlas watch from Tiffany's. It was round quartz, stainless steel with a gray dial, on a stainless steel bracelet.

"Bella this is amazing," I said hugging her and kissing her.

"Flip it over" she winked and laughed.

On the back, she had inscribed a small sentence.

The time of my life is with you-B

I grabbed her again and pulled her in my lap kissing her passionately. This woman was amazing.

"Ok enough please not in front of me" Charlie laughed. We separated as we laughed with everyone else.

Jasper had given Alice a locket as well. The front of hers said mom and the inside were left blank. Alice of course cried her eyes out. Emmett had given Rose a platinum and diamond necklace. It was in the shape of an O in between ever two diamonds' was an X. The diamonds stood for the O's. He told her it was to celebrate there first Christmas as husband and wife.

"Bella, I have one more present for you" I smiled pulling her back to the couch we were sitting on.

Single Mom

"You were not supposed to get me anything else!" she blushed.

"Well it is from Emily and me really and to Macie also" I smiled.

"Hmm" she glared.

"Emily, remember were I put Bella's other present?"

"Yes!" she smiled.

"Take Bella to it please?" I smiled. My daughter was the perfect one to give her this present. Bella just looked at me confused as Emily pulled her over to the tree.

"Right there Bella!" She smiled and pointed into the tree to the spot I had hidden the little box.

Bella looked around the room to see the confused looks of everyone else. She pulled the box out of the tree and came back over to sit down.

"I'm kind of scared to open it" she laughed.

"Please! I want to see what it is" Emily smiled and came over to us. I pulled her up, sat her on the couch with us, and motioned for Macie.

"Why don't you have Macie unwrap it and you open the box" I smiled happily.

"Ok" she shrugged.

Macie climbed up on the couch, unwrapped the little flat square box, and handed it to Bella. She lifted the lid of the box with a confused look.

"It's a key," she said.

"What do we need a key for?" Macie asked.

Single Mom

"Well I was hoping you could use it on my front door" I smiled.

Realization hit Bella and she smiled. It wasn't just any smile though. This was her im-so-ecstatic-I-want-to-kiss-you smile.

"CAN WE?" Macie yelled happily.

"PLEASE!" Emily pleaded as she jumped from me to Bella wrapping her arms around her neck.

"Yes" she laughed and hugged Emily back. "Yes we can!" She added again as she pulled Macie into the hug.

Epilouge is next! dont forget to review love you guys! Im goin to bed haha

Epilouge

Here We are. The end is here. Before I say my thanks and all the sappy stuff. I have named the sequel.

2 Plus 2 is the title. I have the first chapter wrote already. I will not be posting it right after this though. I want to be a few chapters in before it is up. But with the way it is flowing it won't be long I promise.

Thank you all my loyal readers and all the new readers that have joined. Night Orchid U are the best babe! Momams and Flora73 thank you so much for being Dihards for this story! You are the Review experts lol Momam's and her review-athons are amazing.

Vampyregurl09, twilightlover109, elaine67 ,twifan1986, twifan1987, edward5953, carey1090, Collegegirl1123, 1dreamkeeper, Love is a gift, bmkgreen, and babybaby15 You ALL ROCK! Thanks for your awesome reviews and sticking with me! I love all you guys.

I promise to try my best to keep the sequel to your expectations lol

Everyone who Author Alerted me, Favorited me or the story THANK YOU!

Here it is. The final Chapter to Single Mom. I hope I cleared everything up for you. Read Review and ENJOY! Look at the bottom for Sequel info! I made this Long for you guys. It is the longest chapter for this story.

Thier are pics up on page for this.

Thanks Scarletappy for all your love and help with this!

Single Mom

Ch. 23

Epilogue

BPOV

3 Months later

"Mommy can we stay at grandma Esme's tonight?" Emily asked me. Yes, she had started calling me mommy shortly after Christmas.

"Sweetie the party is tomorrow, Esme has a lot going on." I smiled hoping to appease her. Macie was turning four tomorrow.

"She said we could! We want to help Grandpa blow up balloons," Macie pleaded.

"Let me call them and we will see. I want the toys picked up five minutes ago." I glared.

"OK!" The said and ran to their room.

I grabbed the portable phone and called Esme. She was just as bad as the girls in wanting them to stay.

"Are you sure Esme? I mean there is a lot going on over there," I laughed.

" *Please Bella; I want my babies up here to help. Plus Jace is here and you know how they both adore him.*" She pleaded.

"OK fine I will bring them up in a little bit. I am making them pick up their room and I am folding cloths."

" *Thank you so much Bella! Don't worry about bringing them up unless you want to stay to. Jasper said he would walk them up he wants to borrow a book*"

"I promised to let you do whatever you wanted. I have no desire to witness the insanity today. Plus I have to finish getting the house cleaned" I laughed. Esme

Single Mom

and Carlisle wanted to throw Macie's birthday party and I had finally agreed. It had really worked out for the best considering Edward had been gone for the past two weeks.

" *Have you heard from Edward? Is he going to get home in time?*" She questioned quickly.

"Yes I talked to him early this morning before they went into the studio. He will probably call here soon. His plane lands at 11:15 in the morning. We will have plenty of time to get back and changed before the party at four."

" *I'm so happy he is coming home! I know you and the girls miss him. He wouldn't miss her birthday. I swear he adores her as much as Emily...Has he said anything to you?*"

"Yes he is wrapped around both of there little fingers and they know it very well...Said anything about what exactly?" I asked in confusion.

" *Oh nothing dear, Jasper and Alice will be over in a minute they just walked out the door. Alice needs some air, Jace is a handful today. Carlisle is calling for me to help him with him. I will talk to you later!*"

I told her goodbye and went to check on the girls. They had cleaned up the toys and were playing with their baby dolls. I told them to get ready and went back to folding cloths before Alice and Jasper arrived.

After Jasper had raided my bookshelf and Alice and I had a cup of tea, they headed back to the main house. Macie and I had moved in with Edward and Emily officially in January. We spent our first Valentines as a couple at home. He had cooked dinner and pampered me all night.

Shortly after, he had to leave. He had been in L.A for two weeks recording. Edwards's career was really taking off. This was the first of many trips. He was currently recording for the third movie soundtrack. But he was also working on his own album.

Single Mom

My career was still going strong. I was even furthering my career and going back to school. I was to start the next semester. The hospital was paying most of the expense and I couldn't pass it up. I had been smart enough to take extra courses when I was in the PTA program. I had actually saved myself a year's worth of college. I was going to be a Physical therapist in three years. Of course, I knew it would be hard with two kids. I had made it with outstanding grades with one, and I had Edward and an amazing family. Since I would be going to school in Seattle, we were still talking about moving or commuting. I would be taking what I could online but other courses like Gross Anatomy required being on campus.

We had two amazingly smart girls. And I was completely in love with him. The only time my locket came off was when I showered or something like that. We had settled into our new lives pretty quickly to say the least. We both knew we were it for each other and our children but were not ready to get married. We agreed that when the time was right it would happen. Right now, we were content with what we had.

I finished my housework really quick with the girls gone and decided to relax. I ran the tub and dropped my favorite bath fizzy in. I dropped my Ipod in the dock in the bedroom and turned it on, grabbed the phone's and got in the tub. I laid there socking in the tub listening to Kings of Leon. I Want You was just coming on as my phone rang. He called my cell. He knew how much I loved his ring tone.

"Hey Baby" I smiled knowing he couldn't see but I couldn't help it. I missed him and his voice was just so damn sexy.

" *Hello Love, what are you doing?*"

"I am in *our* tub with one of those amazing bath fizzy's you gave me listening to some music."

" *Kings of Leon? I miss you so much Baby,*" he moaned into the phone.

Single Mom

"I miss you to. But I get to see you tomorrow." I said laughing. He knew what kind of mood I was in.

" *How are my girls?*" he laughed.

"They are at your parents. I have the house all to myself. They miss you though." I sighed.

" *I don't want to wait I want to be with you in our tub.*"

"I want you here to but maybe tomorrow night."

" *Are you sure Love? I mean I really want to be in there with you. I can see you know, I bet you look amazing. I bet your hair is thrown up in that hot sexy messy bun on top of your head and I bet you even added bubbles*"

"How do you know me so well?" I laughed.

"Turn around and see for yourself" he said. His voice didn't come from the phone though. He was here. He was here with me.

My phone went flying to the bathroom floor and I jumped out of the tub. Water dripping off of me and completely naked, I was out of the tub and in his arms. My legs wrapped around him and my arms were around his neck. For the first time in two weeks, I kissed him. It was siring, passionate, and urgent. He had gladly wrapped his arms around me the moment I jumped him.

"I should surprise you in the bath more often" he smiled that adorable crooked smile.

"No you shouldn't leave me for two weeks" I laughed and kissed him again.

He sat me down, cupped my face in his hand, and kissed me softly.

"I love you" he smiled.

Single Mom

"I love you to. God I missed you so much," I said kissing him again.

That was the last we spoke. He grabbed a towel and dried the water that was left on my skin and led me to *our* bed. Our lips barely parted as I helped him undress. You would think all the teasing text messages, late night phone calls, and video chats would have made us urgent. But there was nothing urgent about it. His hands ghosted over my body as mine did to his. Our kisses were soft and sensual. And when he entered me it was slow and smooth.

We didn't need anything fast; we needed to feel each other. I needed to feel him inside me.

We continued our pace until neither could take it anymore. He kissed, nibbled and licked his way from my collarbone to my ear lobe pulling it into his mouth with a light suck. My nails scrapped up his back until I grabbed his shoulders arching my back. Our pace was steadily increasing and I could feel myself on edge.

His hands entwined and my hair and our gaze met. That was all it took and two more thrust I was falling over the edge bringing him with me.

"God I missed you," he said burying his face in the crook of my neck.

"I missed you to" I smiled and kissed his shoulder. He rolled off of me and pulled me to him.

"How did you get here?" I asked all of a sudden.

"Emmett" he laughed.

"Did you plan this?"

"Yes. After I talked to you this morning, I couldn't wait any longer. So when the girls got on the phone I planted the idea of staying at moms. After we hung up, I called mom. I called Emmett with my flight plans and now here I am." he laughed and kissed my temple.

Single Mom

"You are sneaky Cullen"

"What you want me to go back?" He tried to act like he was devastated and went to sit up.

"If you leave this bed I promise you I will leave you" I laughed and pulled him back to me.

EPOV

Bella and I laughed and talked about the past two weeks apart before she drifted off to sleep. I had decided it was best to wait until after the party to talk about the album. Apparently, my one single was a huge success. My work on the soundtrack had scored a place on the rest of the movies for the series.

Now I was looking at a tour. I would be opening for several different artists. Kings of Leon a few shows, The Script for most of them, and I had even been offered to open for The Frey for two shows. The dates spanned for a nine-month period. I would have breaks but would only be home a few days at a time every other week almost.

I had no doubt Bella would support me in this decision. But I knew it would be hard.

We had discussed moving to Seattle for her to attend school. The hospital has a branch of Seattle. so they will be paying for most of it would still be on. Emily would be five in August and starting school. Her birthday fell at just the right time. We had decided to enroll Macie in Pre-K also.

Moving to Seattle was the smartest thing for all of us. I talked to my agent about it all while I was in L.A. Maggie had talked to the label and got them to let me use a studio in Seattle. "It would save a lot of trips and make him happier if you want him to tour" was her argument. Of course, she won, that's why she was my agent.

Single Mom

I finally decided to stop thinking about it all and fell asleep. We would talk about it after the party.

BPOV

I woke up tangled in Edward. I couldn't have stopped smiling if you held a gun to my head. I was in his arms for the first time in two weeks and today was my daughter's birthday.

I kissed him awake and made him get dressed while I fixed breakfast. We had to hurry and get to the main house and help out. Plus I knew the girls would be excited to see him.

I wasn't wrong about the excitement either. Everyone had kept it a secret from them he was home. We had decided to work out a little surprise for them. So I walked in the house leaving Edward on the porch swing. Two crazy girls throwing their arms around my legs and laughing met me.

"Good morning girls" I laughed and kissed them each on the tops of their head.

"When's daddy coming home?" Macie asked with a little pout. We had tried to avoid the whole mommy and daddy thing but they had their on minds when it came to that.

"Soon, very soon" I laughed.

"For my party?"

"We will just have to see. Come on let's go get everyone."

Everyone was gathered in the kitchen and looking at me strange. They were expecting Edward to be with me. I just shook my head and smiled.

"Girls, can you go get Liz and Mr. Darcy they need to come in now" I smiled.

"Ok" they laughed and ran for the door. After a yell to slow down, we followed them. They missed Edward as much as I did, so I was looking forward to

Single Mom

seeing their reaction to him sitting on the porch.

Sure enough, they busted through the front door screaming for the dogs. Mr. Darcy barked from the swing and they snapped their heads around. Ok the dogs missed him to. Liz had her head in his lap and Darcy was sitting as close beside him as he could get.

The girls screamed and attacked Edward sending the dogs running for their lives. Rose, Esme, and Alice just awed at the scene while the boys smiled. Jace let out a little giggle.

Jace decided to give himself to everyone for Christmas. He was a month early but was perfectly healthy. December 27th Jace Allen Hale was born at two in the morning. Alice had started having contractions Christmas Day. We were all relaxing that evening when they had started. Around midnight her water had broken. She spent the next day lying in a hospital bed. Jasper had called everyone back to the hospital about midnight. She pushed for an hour before he finally arrived. Alice had sworn she would never do it again that night. But over the past three months she was slowly starting to change her mind.

He was completely spoiled and one of the most adorable little boys ever. Macie had asked if she could have a brother for a birthday present. Edward and I of course were immediately refusing. We were not even married and both had careers expanding. Plus two was enough for now, especially with me going back to school.

After the girls finally climbed off Edward, we got busy. We decorated the house, the backyard and the massive swing set/playhouse. Before we knew it, the party had started. I could have sworn almost every kid in Forks was there. Esme had a rented a castle jumper. The whole party was princess themed. The boys were all given the soft fake swords while the girls all had tiaras. I had no clue where the cake had came from but it was a castle also. Rose had been in charge of the cake. The invitations were even on fancy print paper. They were designed to look like an invitation to a ball. Alice of course was in charge of those. Before to long we were singing happy birthday.

Single Mom

"You look like a monkey and smell like one to!" Emmett boomed when we finished singing. Rose smacked him upside the head and Macie stuck her tongue out before she blew her candles out.

My baby was growing up. As I looked around at everyone, I felt my eyes well up. We had a family, a very big family. Charlie and Sue were getting married this summer. They had worried it would bother me that it was so short but I was ecstatic. Phil was coaching for the Seattle Mariners so they had moved to Seattle. They made the trip for Macie's party gladly. Jacob had proposed to Nessie, and they were cuddled up sharing a piece of cake. Jasper had stuck his finger in Alice's icing to smear a little taste on Jace's lip. Emmett was patting Rose's tummy and smiling wildly. Who knew what those two were up to. Seth and Leah had become family since Charlie and Sue got together. We had always hung out but now we were all close.

I watched as Edward jumped in the Castle with Macie and Emily. He was carefree when he was around those two. Carlisle had even snuck in there and was acting like a kid. Eric and Erin were here along with Angela, Ben, Jessica and Mike. We all still hung out as much as we could but everyone was busy these days. We usually got together every few weeks. Angela and Ben were trying for a baby. We still had out lunch together with Alice, Rose, Erin, or Jessica joining us sometimes.

Esme of course was running around doting on everyone with a huge smile. That's when it hit me. What would my life have been like if I would have pushed him away? I couldn't picture it. I knew it wouldn't be easy but it was definitely worth it. I don't think I would ever regret any of it.

Later that night we tucked the girls in bed and snuggled up close in *our* bed.

"I love you," I whispered as he hit play on the movie.

"I love you to" he smiled and kissed me softly.

"I wanted to talk to you about something," he said as he climbed in over me.

Single Mom

"What's wrong?" I asked a little worried.

"Nothing is wrong. Everything is really good actually. But I got some news in L.A. They want me to tour." his eyes held happiness, worry, and anxiousness maybe?

"That's great baby!" I smiled

"Yah and they also agreed to let me record in Seattle." he smiled now. Was he worried I wouldn't like any of this? Of course, I would be happy.

"That's even better! Does that mean no more long stays in L.A.?"

"Yes but I would be on the road a lot for the tour. It's for the next nine months. I will only be home a few days at a time. Probably be gone a week or two at a time." He was half smiling.

"Well we can deal with that. You love your music and so do I. Yes, I will hate being away from you but we can handle it. I mean we made it the past two weeks." I smiled reassuring him.

"It is an awesome opportunity. I will be opening for The Script, kings of Leon and The Frey." he beamed.

"My favorites! I have to come to some of those!" I squealed.

"I was thinking maybe you and the girls could spend two weeks with me on the road," he said laughing.

"That sounds great!" I squealed. I was bouncing on the bed all giggly. Ok I was acting like Alice I admit it.

After I calmed down, he turned a little more serious.

"I think we should move to Seattle."

Single Mom

"I mean we have talked about it...but what about everything here?" We had talked about it. I wasn't sure it was something I wanted to do really, but it was the smartest thing. I would have to commute to school and stay a few nights in Seattle during semesters. The school option for the girls was a lot better than Forks.

"Well we would still have this place and could stay here anytime we wanted. Renee and Phil are there so we would still have family there. You wouldn't have to take online courses either. Plus I really like The Bush School."

"I do to. Everything about it is great. And you make a good point. Maybe we should" I sighed. We had toured the school a few weeks ago and met the staff. We would be paying a nice price but it was really worth it. The diversity, the healthy meal plan's, and the learning opportunities were all screaming enroll me now! I was worried about the price though.

"Well we should really start looking for a place soon then. I mean we only have four months until you August. School starts then and we want to be ready then right?"

"Yah, so let's start looking tomorrow. We can tell everyone about it in a few weeks." I smiled.

"Deal babe. You have no idea how happy I am with you guy's" he sighed pulling me a little closer. I was already lying on his chest.

"Dido. I still have to figure out what to do about Macie's tuition though. And we have to find a great Pre-K program since Bush doesn't offer one." I sighed.

"Well we can do that. And don't worry about tuition babe. I want her to go there so I plan on paying for it."

"Come on! You know how I feel about that," I said sitting up.

"Bella, you are going back to school pretty much on a free ride. I mean in three years you will be making plenty of money. You won't be working like you

Single Mom

have been once school starts. I am making plenty of money. Since I hired Jessica, I don't have to worry about the restaurant an all. She pretty much run's it. Money is not a problem, you are living with an up and coming musician" he winked.

"Yah and he better not let it go to his head" I laughed and shoved him lightly.

He made a very valid point. We really had no worries financially. Money was never an option for his family. He had hired Jessica back in January to be the general manager. She took great care of the place. Her and Mike had actually moved to Port Angeles and bought the apartment. My income was fine and would increase dramatically once I was finished with school.

James had paid his back child support with the help of Victoria's family and was officially out of our lives. Tanya was even out of lives. She was ordered to serve two years in prison and her family forced her to sign her rights over. They had even found Marcus and had him in prison for twenty years. He had committed several crimes to say the least. Tanya's family would visit Emily on a regular basis now. I had even forgiven Kate and Garrett, who just got married.

The next day was spent searching listings in Seattle. Two weeks later after two trips to Seattle to look at houses and apartments, we found one. We broke the news's to our families after getting the call from our Realtor. They had accepted our offer. We signed the papers the week after and were moved in April twentieth. We had found a great Pre-k program for Macie and Emily had been accepted to Bush. Macie was also on the list for the following year.

Rose and Emmett were expecting their first child in September. Her pregnancy was very high risk, but the doctors assured her the best. They moved to Seattle to be close to her doctors.

Pixie was growing very quickly. Alice had decided to set up shop in Seattle also. Between her and Rose Pixie was going to be on the rack right beside Ralph Lauren or Burberry.

Single Mom

Edward left for the tour a week after we moved in. Rose and Emmett were moving in a few weeks. I wouldn't be able to help since the girls and I would be spending two weeks on the road with Edward. Alice, Jasper and Jace were moving to Seattle in June. They were trying to get a house close by us. Rose and Emmett were moving in two houses down. Carlisle and Esme were a little mad everyone was leaving them but decided to visit regularly. We had two spare rooms in our beautiful large home, plenty of room for both sets of parents. We were only ten minutes from mom and Phil.

The girls were with Renee and I sat in *OUR* new home. Edward had only been gone for two days but I missed him already. Esme had helped me decorate. The place was beautiful. Emmett was setting up the massive swing set/playhouse this weekend so the girls would have it. He had said he had no problems doing it, but I had to let his little one play on it anytime. I laughed and agreed.

But as I sat there and tried to calm my mind. Edward would be calling soon. I would have to focus and get it together. I was nervous about leaving the house for two weeks but I couldn't wait at the same time. He knew how random my mind was and I didn't want him to think I didn't want to visit. We wouldn't have a lot of time together over the next few months. We would have a break for the holidays but he would have to go back right after. Live for us would definitely be hectic. I would drive Emily to school 15 minuets away and then to the university of Washington each morning. Macie's Pre-K program was on campus. We would come home at the end of the day, eat, do homework, and try to video chat with Edward as much as we could. Renee, Rose, and Alice all offered to help with the girls as much as possible. I still had a few months before school started but I start work at the hospital here a week after our visit with Edward.

Life was going to be crazy but we would make it and it all would be worth it I was sure. I came to that realization right before Edward called.

" *Hey baby*"

"Hey!" I smiled at hearing his voice.

Single Mom

" *How's your day of relaxing going?*" he laughed.

"Well I was just thinking how crazy everything is going to be but I decided it was worth it," I laughed.

" *Good, because I miss you and cant wait to see you in 5 days*"

"Same here. Are we going to get a chance to video chat with you later?"

" *Well what time are the girls coming back?*"

"They should be back around 5" I heard him ask were they would be around then.

" *Yah we should be able to do it. What time is it now?*"

"It's 3:30"

" *Yah we will definitely be able to. But I got to go, love. I will see you soon. We are stopping for food and gas.*"

"I love you, see you soon"

" *Love you to*"

I hated the short phone calls already. I would make it though.

Well did I clear it all up? I hope you enjoyed it as much as I have enjoyed writing it.

The sequel 2 Plus 2 will be up soon! I will add one last chapter to this story to let you guys know it is up. But I advise the ones that don't have me on alert or what ever to do it because it will be up soon. the first chapter is complete already I am hoping to work on another later tonight. So once I get a few chapters ahead I will be posting. Most likely in a few days.

Single Mom

My story misleading Life has been put on hold. I wanted to focus on this story and the sequel so i am reworking ML.

Now I love all of you so Shoot the Reviews through the roof for this!

Amy Bee;)

2 Plus 2

Hey everyone!

2 Plus 2 is up! It is rated m for lemons and language as usual.

Go check it out an review away!

NOMINATION!

Hey Everyone Single Mom has been nominated for the 2009 Twilight Awards

On The Two Sides of Twilight forum!

**The deal is it needs 2 or 3 more nominations to make it to voting!
Nominations end tomorrow!**

If you go to Nominate it make sure you do it just like she says or she wont accept it.

It has been nominated for the following categories.

Best Edward and Bella story

Best father/mother-daughter/son moment

And

Best All Human story.

Here is were you go just remove the (.)'s and it will take you there!

[http://forum\(.\)fanfiction\(.\)net/topic/66481/20624122/1/](http://forum(.)fanfiction(.)net/topic/66481/20624122/1/)

Hurry folks! Love you guys if you get us to voting!

You can Also nominate Southern Charm for

Best fanfic in progress!

It started in 2009!

Single Mom

I LOVE YOU GUYS! And I promise to update 2+2 soon!

VOTING!

HEY EVERYONE!

I know this isn't a update but it is very **important**. As you have seen on my stories that Single Mom was nominated three times in the **2009 Twilight Awards!**

Voting is now open. You have until **March 15 th**to get your final votes in. I copied her post for everyone from the **how to vote** section. **You will find it below.**

This means a lot to me and I can't thank you guys enough! I am not giving any special shout outs here but they know who they are lol.

The Voting Forum is a different one than Nominations. It is called:

Curiosity...Killed The Cat *Remove the (.) but keep the . Lol*

[http://forum\(.\)fanfiction\(.\)net/forum/CuriosityKilled_The_Cat/69076/](http://forum(.)fanfiction(.)net/forum/CuriosityKilled_The_Cat/69076/)

We are in Three Categories: I am giving you the link to each category. But there are some amazing writers up for nomination in all categories so have fun and **vote for Single Mom :D**

MAKE SURE TO REMOVE THE ()

BEST BELLA AND EDWARD STORY

[http://forum\(.\)fanfiction\(.\)net/topic/69076/20907848/1/](http://forum(.)fanfiction(.)net/topic/69076/20907848/1/)

BEST ALL HUMAN

[http://forum\(.\)fanfiction\(.\)net/topic/69076/21486184/1/](http://forum(.)fanfiction(.)net/topic/69076/21486184/1/)

BEST FATHER/MOTHER-DAUGHTER/SON MOMENT

[http://forum\(.\)fanfiction\(.\)net/topic/69076/21487633/1/](http://forum(.)fanfiction(.)net/topic/69076/21487633/1/)

VOTING RULES:

The way you'll have to vote is very simple. You will see that in the forum every topic is a category. I won't force you to go and vote for every category... but in each of the categories you will have to vote for the 3 best stories.

So how do you vote? Simple. You will give 5 points to the story you consider the best, 3 points to the second best and 1 point to the third. I WILL NOT accept any post that hasn't got 3 stories voted.

Example:

BEST STORY: (All the names are invented if any of them is real, it is just a coincidence)

Jasper, the adventures of the mojo major by XxRoseX (2nd fave: 3 points)

You & Eternityby SusieLuvesEddie

Let's dance under the moonlight by IgotEmmettCullenInMyWall

Emmett and the chipmunks by RedEyeGirl (3rd fave: 1 point)

Forever yours Jacob Black by Lautner'sGirl2560 (1st fave: 5 points)

So my post will be:

Emmett and the chipmunksby RedEyeGirl (1 point)

Forever yours Jacob Black by Lautner'sGirl2560 (5 points)

Single Mom

Jasper, the adventures of the mojo major by XxRosexX (3 points

Award winners translation PDF file

Hey everyone! Great news

1st of this story place second in the 2009 Twilight Awards category best Mother/Father-Daughter/Son moment. Clipped Wings Inked Armor came in 1st!

I was doing a major happy dance.

2nd This story is now available in a corrected PDF and DOC file. If you would like it I need an e-mail addy.

AND

Last but not least.

I have had the chapters that were not betaed gone over and corrected. I am sure there are still errors.

The reason this was done is because this story will be translated into POLISH!

I was super siked when LittleBella001 messaged me.

She will be posting it here(I can't read it!) remove space and ()

[http://chomikuj\(.\)pl/Tinker_](http://chomikuj(.)pl/Tinker_)

Once she is finished I will be posting it on Rogue and maybe here.

She is planning on doing the Sequel as well.

If you have any questions don't be afraid to ask :D

XOXO

Amy Bee

Fics 4 Nash and more

Hey everyone!

I haven't updated anything in forever and a day because I put all my time into two pieces. It is a valid excuse I swear!

The most important is the Fics 4 Nash piece. It is called When We Were In Love and is an OT from Bella and Emmett's past in Old Flames. There are all sorts of awesome pieces and so far over 6,000 dollars has been raised for my home state! So please help us out and receive this amazing compilation!

Remove the ()'s

[http://community\(.\)livejournal\(.\)com/ficsfornash/6052\(.\)html](http://community(.)livejournal(.)com/ficsfornash/6052(.)html)

The Second is a competition piece for the Me and Mr. McCarty contest! I will have the final betaed copy up soon :D I have had it betaed intensely and it should get it now. I will be resending it for entry today. So keep an eye out for it!

Voting

After the submission deadline has passed, there will be an open/public voting round featuring all validated entries.

Open Voting will run from June 15 12:00 AM PST to June 29 11:59 PM PST.

In addition to Open Voting, there will be a Judges' Selection round. The judges will assess all submitted entries, with a top three and individual favorites to be decided on.

For all the details go to: [http://meandmrmccarty\(.\)blogspot\(.\)com/](http://meandmrmccarty(.)blogspot(.)com/) *Remove*
()

I love you guys and now that these two things are done I promise to get my

Single Mom

booty back in full gear. I am working on updates for SC, OF, and AFL I also have the draft for the AL update for you Kinkymommies followers.

Remember I am MommyAmyBee on twitter if you wanna know what I am up to and working on :D

Xoxo

Amy Bee

Hidden Star Awards

HEY! Ok so guess what!

I'm bouncing off the walls right now! I got nominated for 3 Hidden Star Awards!

[http://thehiddenstarawards\(.\)blogspot\(.\)com/](http://thehiddenstarawards(.)blogspot(.)com/)

Old Flames for Best AH story

Homemade for best One Shot

Right there in black and white for Best Tear Jerker

SO ya I am super excited!

Voting will be done by a poll. One vote per person, per category, and you are allowed to vote for yourself.

First group of voting will start on September 10th and will last till the 14th, ending at midnight US ECT. Second group of voting will start on the 16th and will last till the 20th, ending at midnight US ECT. Winners will be notified soon after.

Go check it out and don't forget to vote to vote starting the 10th!

Love you guys,

MommyAmyBee